

FBI on John Birch Society... rev. August 12, 2017

This page contains Chapters 1 thru 4

INTRODUCTION – then

Chapter 1 = FBI Evaluations of Robert Welch and the John Birch Society

Chapter 2 = FBI vs. JBS on Internal Security Status of United States

Chapter 3 = FBI vs. JBS on Communist Infiltration of Clergy and Religious Institutions

Chapter 4 = FBI vs. JBS on Communists Within the Department of Health, Education, Welfare

My 235-page Report on the John Birch Society consists of 10 chapters as follows:

Chap #	Comment	URL
1	FBI Evaluations of Robert Welch and the Birch Society –including an introduction to Mr. Welch’s book length “private letter”, entitled <i>The Politician</i> FBI HQ instructions to FBI field offices regarding Welch, the JBS, and incoming requests for FBI publications from JBS representatives are discussed in three "SAC Letters" reproduced in this Chapter.	http://sites.google.com/site/ernie124102/jbs-1
2	FBI vs. JBS on Internal Security Status of United States	Same as above
3	FBI vs. JBS on Alleged Communist Infiltration of Clergy and Religious Institutions	Same as above

4	FBI vs. JBS on Alleged Communist Infiltration of the Department of Health, Education, Welfare	Same as above
5	FBI vs. JBS on Alleged Communist Sympathies of Harry A. Overstreet , author of the 1958 book, <i>What We Must Know About Communism</i>	http://sites.google.com/site/ernie124102/jbs-2
6	FBI vs. JBS on Civil Rights Movement in the United States. Includes discussion of: <ul style="list-style-type: none">• Communist strategy regarding “<i>Negro Soviet Republic</i>”• Alan Stang’s 1965 JBS-published book, <i>It’s Very Simple: The True Story of Civil Rights</i>• Highlander Folk School described by the JBS as a “<i>Communist Training School</i>”• Gary Allen’s article in the JBS magazine (<i>American Opinion</i>) on the August 1965 Watts Riot – entitled “<i>The Plan To Burn Los Angeles</i>”• Birch Society Comments About African American Civil Rights and Labor Leader A. Philip Randolph	http://sites.google.com/site/ernie124102/jbs-3
7	FBI vs. JBS on Persons Whom JBS Claims Are “Experts” on Communism – includes discussion of former FBI Special Agents and FBI informants who endorsed the Birch Society and often were speakers under the auspices of the JBS Speakers Bureau – such as Dan Smoot, W. Cleon Skousen, Julia Brown and Lola Belle Holmes, plus material on David Gumaer, Matt Cvetic, and Karl Prussion	Same as above
8	Right-Wing Critics of Robert Welch and the Birch Society	http://sites.google.com/site/ernie124102/jbs-4 ALSO SEE correspondence by JBS members which I have posted on Internet Archive website here: https://archive.org/stream/JBS_CRITICS_INSIDE_JBS-1#page/n0/mode/2up
9	Documentary History of John Birch Society NEW! Documents generally not previously publicly available – including private correspondence between Robert Welch and JBS National Council members. <u>JBS9005a</u> also includes links to selected newspaper articles re: JBS appearing in Google News Archive	https://sites.google.com/site/ernie1241/ https://sites.google.com/site/ernie1241a/ https://sites.google.com/site/ernie1241b/ https://sites.google.com/site/jbs9004/ https://sites.google.com/site/jbs9005a/

10	NEW! Background re: individuals hired by JBS as speakers under auspices of JBS American Opinion Speakers Bureau	https://sites.google.com/site/xrt013/home/jbs
----	--	---

Note:

My collection of FBI files pertaining to the Birch Society and related subject matters are now on the Internet Archive website (see links below---and more will be added in the near future)

<https://archive.org/details/lazarfoia?and%5B%5D=mediatype%3A%22collection%22&sort=titleSorter>

AND

Additional material is now at:

<https://archive.org/details/@ernie1241?sort=titleSorter>

This Report explains why senior FBI officials (including FBI Director J. Edgar Hoover) came to the conclusion in FBI memos that the Birch Society was "*extremist*", "*irrational*", "*irresponsible*", "*fanatics*", and "*lunatic fringe*."

Future editions of this Report will present additional data concerning:

- the so-called "*mother article*" which appeared in a February 1961 issue of the west coast Communist newspaper, *People's World* -- which is the article that the Birch Society claims was subsequently used as the basis of mainstream media criticisms about the JBS. This chapter will illustrate how the JBS distorts reality, by selective use of evidence and suppression of inconvenient data, to arrive at false conclusions
- an overview of libel lawsuits involving the Birch Society or its surrogates who used Birch Society evidence and logic---and the results of those lawsuits. The most famous of which (*Gertz vs. Robert Welch Inc.*) is discussed in chapter 6 of this Report. The Birch Society paid \$400,000 to Gertz for their libel
- Chapter 7 will be expanded to include material on "JBS experts" such as Delmar Dennis who was an FBI informant who subsequently became a paid speaker under the auspices of the Birch Society's American Opinion Speakers Bureau
- the sensitive topic of racism and anti-semitism within the JBS [I'm saving this for last because it is the most difficult section to write because the JBS normally suppresses any adverse data about itself and will not allow outside independent researchers to have access to its archives for historical research.]

ALSO SEE MY RELATED REPORTS:

Edgar Bundy (Church League of America)

<http://ernie1241.googlepages.com/bundy-1>

Anatoli Golitsyn

<http://ernie1241.googlepages.com/golitsyn>

Highlander Folk School

<http://ernie1241.googlepages.com/hfs-1>

Dan Smoot (former FBI Special Agent)

<http://ernie1241.googlepages.com/smoot>

W. Cleon Skousen (former FBI Special Agent)

This report includes an analysis of Skousen's 1963 pamphlet entitled "*The Communist Attack On The John Birch Society*" -- which, once again, reveals how selection of evidence can be used to distort reality.

<http://ernie1241.googlepages.com/skousen>

NOTE:

Bibliographic citations appear in [brackets] below. "HQ" refers to the FBI "headquarters" file and serial number. "SAC" refers to the Special-Agent-in-Charge of FBI field offices.

INTRODUCTION:

The FBI headquarters main file on the John Birch Society is 62-104401 and it consists of about 12,000 pages in 60 sections. There are also additional sections consisting of public source material (primarily newspaper and magazine articles) which totals about 3000 pages.

However, this can be somewhat misleading in terms of the scope of Bureau interest in the Birch Society because numerous separate main files exist on persons, publications, front groups, and controversies connected to the Birch Society. In addition, there are often "*cross-references*" contained in other files which pertain to JBS-related subject

matters.

In addition, almost every FBI field office opened a main file on the Birch Society and those field office files often were hundreds or thousands of pages. Of particular interest are the Boston, Chicago, and Los Angeles field office files which, combined, contain approximately 4800 pages. While a field office would normally send its summary memos or reports to headquarters, there often was considerable data not sent to headquarters---which is why the field office files should be reviewed.

EARLIEST DOCUMENTS

The earliest documents in the JBS main file are dated September 1957 (more than a year before the Birch Society was founded in December 1958). The documents discuss Robert Welch's self-published magazine then entitled *One Man's Opinion [OMO]*. In February 1958 its name was changed to *American Opinion [AO]*. The latter became the official organ of the Birch Society.

Senior Bureau officials were aware of Mr. Welch's writings because copies of his magazines (both OMO and AO) were sent to the Bureau by Welch. Those copies were often routed to senior FBI staff for review.

Later, as the Bureau became familiar with the Birch Society, it subscribed to *American Opinion* magazine under an alias. [See HQ 62-104401, #2, which is a 1/17/58 note concerning the routing of the February 1958 issue of *American Opinion* to Associate Director Clyde Tolson, and several officials within the Bureau's Domestic Intelligence Division.]

In April 1958, J. Edgar Hoover sent a thank-you note to Edwin McDowell at *American Opinion* expressing "appreciation for your generous comments" in a review article about Hoover's book, *Masters of Deceit*, which was published in the May 1958 issue of *American Opinion*. [HQ 62-104401, #3; 4/24/58 Hoover letter to McDowell.]

AMERICAN OPINION SCOREBOARD IGNITES FBI CONCERN:

In October 1958 the Legal Attaché at our embassy in Bonn, Germany received an inquiry from Col. Charles Mudgett Jr., Chief Counterintelligence Branch, G-2 Army Intelligence, that attached excerpts from the first annual *American Opinion* "Scoreboard" issue (July/August 1958). Our Legal Attaché asked FBI HQ to provide "information appropriate for reply to G-2"

The *Scoreboard* issue was compiled annually to estimate the degree of "*Communist influence and control*" in 105 countries around the world. The first *Scoreboard* estimated that the United States was 20-40% under "*Communist influence and control*". Several of our NATO allies were reported to be 40-60% under "*Communist influence and control*."

A footnote to the section pertaining to the United States declared that there was "*Communist domination of the unions which control many strategic parts of our economy and our defense.*"

Even more ominously, the *Scoreboard* analysis claimed that "*75 vital links in the most secret communications of our government including those of the Pentagon to Air Force bases in New York, Maine, England, Canada, and Newfoundland*" were all available to one Communist-dominated union, the American Communications Association.

Furthermore, the *Scoreboard* article claimed that no one in the Pentagon or Congress or the Executive Branch "*even*

dares to try" to close down "this door of betrayal" because "That is one indication of how powerful the Communist influence has now become in almost all of our federal agencies."

These inflammatory and alarmist accusations were among the first to trigger Bureau interest in Robert Welch and his activities.

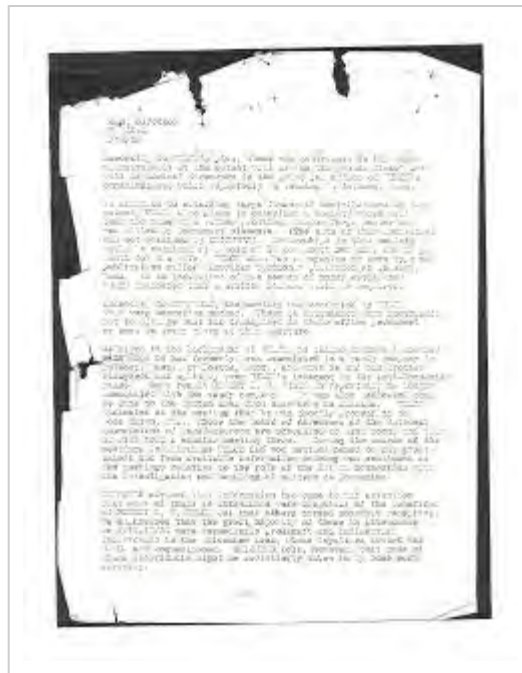
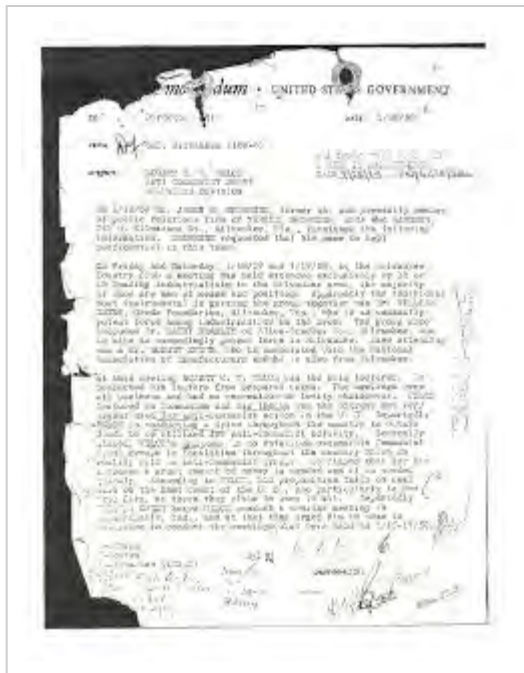
First, the *Scoreboard* issue of AO, then an FBI Milwaukee field office report about a "secretive" group which Robert Welch was forming which appeared to encroach upon Bureau responsibilities, then revelations from Welch's *Politician* manuscript, then a deluge of public inquiries and complaints --- all of this combined to produce an acute sensitivity within the Bureau about the type of anti-communism which the Birch Society was practicing.

The Bureau would soon discover that Welch and the JBS were severely undermining public confidence and trust in our top political leadership as well as the security agencies of our country.

THE FBI LEARNS ABOUT THE BIRCH SOCIETY

In late January 1959 (six weeks after the founding meeting of the JBS in Indianapolis), the Special Agent in Charge of the FBI's Milwaukee field office sent a memo to Hoover which summarized a report from a Milwaukee office confidential source who was identified as a former FBI Special Agent who was an employee at a public relations firm and he had attended a JBS recruitment meeting where Mr. Welch spoke.

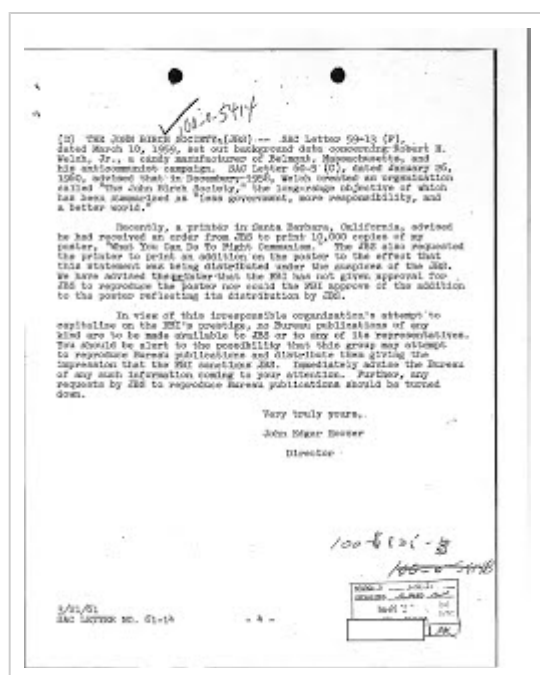
"According to Shinnars [James R. Shinnars, former FBI Special Agent who attended and reported on meeting to FBI Milwaukee] the meeting was conducted by Welch in a very secretive manner. Those in attendance were instructed not to divulge what had transpired to their office personnel or even to their wives at this juncture." Shinnars "emphasized that the great majority of those in attendance...were exceedingly prominent and influential individuals in the Milwaukee area, whose loyalties toward the U.S. are unquestioned." [HQ 62-104401, #6; 1/20/59 SAC Milwaukee to J. Edgar Hoover.]



Shinners reported that “Welch lectured on communism and his thesis was the extreme and very urgent need for anti-communist action in the United States...Generally stated, Welch's purpose is to establish ostensible Communist front groups in localities throughout the country which in reality will be anti-Communist groups...” [Ibid]

It is unclear if Mr. Shinners understood Welch correctly with respect to creating “ostensible Communist front groups”. However, this was interpreted by the Bureau as potentially interfering with its functions and it triggered Bureau interest in the background of Welch and his plans for future activities. Furthermore, the Bureau had discovered that Robert Welch subscribed to the Communist newspaper, *Daily Worker*, which further piqued their interest. [HQ 62-104401, #7; 2/4/59 SAC Boston to J. Edgar Hoover.]

The Assistant Director in charge of the Bureau's Domestic Intelligence Division recommended that “Boston [FBI field



THE BUREAU LEARNS ABOUT "THE POLITICIAN" by Robert Welch

In late December 1958, the FBI Boston field office received a communication from G-2 Army Intelligence in New York City which attached excerpts from Robert's Welch's unpublished "*private letter*" entitled *The Politician* [hereafter TP] which was Welch's analysis of President Dwight D. Eisenhower. Although described as "a letter", it was 287 pages.

G-2 advised Boston that a copy of Welch's manuscript was mailed to a U.S. Army serviceperson [Master Specialist Helen G. Morrissey] by Welch on August 31, 1958. Morrissey then asked Welch to send a copy of TP to Thomas Farrell in Brooklyn, New York (which he did) and G-2 obtained its copy from Farrell.

In a cover letter captioned "*Dear Reader*" accompanying TP, Welch described his "private letter" as being "on loan to you, for your eyes only, until it is returned." Welch states that the persons receiving a copy of TP "have been very carefully selected—for reasons which will become obvious" and "I hope you will consider the contents as strictly confidential."

Army Intelligence, 108th CIC Group in New York, described this unpublished version of TP in a January 1959 memo, as follows:

"*The Politician* is an attack on President Eisenhower and an allegation, in considerable detail that he has consistently aided the cause of Russia and International Communism...Chapter Nine of *The Politician* is particularly violent in its denunciation of President Eisenhower."

"As an evaluation of the motives of Robert H.W. Welch Jr., in writing *The Politician*, and distributing it, it is felt that he is a Republican of the extreme right wing of the Party who has become progressively more and more disillusioned by the post-World War II soft attitude of the United States toward International Communism and who had been frustrated

by the preponderance of Modern Republicans in the present Administration. His feeling that President Eisenhower has deviated to the Left has now apparently grown to the point where he accuses the President of actively furthering Communism and its aims."

"An attack such as this one on the Chief Executive of the United States of America can only favor those elements of society who oppose the democratic processes by which we elect Presidents, and as such, aids the cause of International Communism which the author claims to abhor. The author must be considered to have become unbalanced on his subject or to be consciously aiding the enemies of the Republic. In view of his previous writings and background, it must be concluded that his hate for Communism has obscured his judgment and that he has written an unbalanced book." [HQ 62-104401, #8 which is 01/14/59 G-2 report on TP attached to 2/11/59 letter by Lt. Col. Ned Glenn, Acting Chief, Security Division, Army Intelligence]

In early 1959, the FBI Boston field office obtained the entire copy of TP from Army Intelligence and they forwarded it to FBI HQ. After reviewing its content, Hoover sent memos to the Attorney General, plus Gordon Gray who was Special Assistant to the President, as well as other government officials.

Hoover's memo stated that:

"This book attacks the reputation of the President of the United States, particularly chapter nine, which is a violent attack on President Eisenhower." [HQ 62-104401, #10; 3/6/59 Hoover memo.]

Robert Welch (and his friends) were acutely aware of the damage that his comments about Eisenhower would have if they became publicly known. For example, in a letter to J.W. Clise of Seattle, Welch wrote:

"Our rather extreme precautions with regard to this document are not due to any worry on my part as to what might happen to myself...But many of my best informed friends feel that having the manuscript get into the wrong hands at the present time might do far more damage than good to the whole anti-Communist cause; whereas, by distributing it very carefully and quietly to quite a limited number of strongly patriotic leaders, so that the information in this document becomes a background to their own thinking on which their own actions are determined it can do considerable good." [2/25/59 letter to J.W. Clise, Seattle WA].

After reading TP, Barry Goldwater telephoned Welch and told him "I want no part in this. I won't even have it around. If you were smart, you'd burn every copy you have." (Robert Alan Goldberg, *Barry Goldwater*, Yale University Press, 1995, p. 137)

The passages from the unpublished edition of TP which caused Welch the most grief (and which were quoted the most frequently when its existence became public knowledge in the Summer of 1960) were:

Page 266: "For the sake of honesty, however, I want to confess here my own conviction that Eisenhower's motivation is more ideological than opportunistic. Or, to put it bluntly, I personally think that he has been sympathetic to ultimate Communist aims, realistically willing to use Communist means to help them achieve their goals, knowingly accepting and abiding by Communist orders, and consciously serving the Communist conspiracy, for all of his adult life."

Page 267: "And it seems to me that the explanation of sheer political opportunism, to account for Eisenhower's Communist-aiding career, stems merely from a deep-rooted aversion of any American to recognizing the horrible truth. Most of the doubters, who go all the way with me except to the final logical conclusion, appear to have no

trouble whatever in suspecting that Milton Eisenhower is an outright Communist. Yet they draw back from attaching the same suspicion to his brother, for no other real reason than that one is a professor and the other a president. While I too think that Milton Eisenhower is a Communist, and has been for thirty years, this opinion is based largely on general circumstances of his conduct. But my firm belief that Dwight Eisenhower is a dedicated, conscious agent of the Communist conspiracy is based on an accumulation of detailed evidence so extensive and so palpable that it seems to me to put this conviction beyond any reasonable doubt."

Page 268: "The Communists can now use all the power and prestige of the presidency of the United States to implement their plans, just as fully and even openly as they dare. They have arrived at this point by three stages. In the first stage, Roosevelt thought he was using the Communists, to promote his personal ambitions and grandiose schemes. Of course, instead, the Communists were using him; but without his knowledge or understanding of his place in their game. In the second stage, Truman was used by the Communists, with his knowledge and acquiescence, as the price he consciously paid for their making him president. In the third stage, in my own firm opinion, the Communists have one of their own actually in the presidency. For this third man, Eisenhower, there is only one possible word to describe his purposes and his actions. That word is treason."

Scanned copies of these pages from the unpublished August 1958 edition of TP, may be seen here:



In the 1963 published edition of TP, Welch is somewhat more guarded and theoretical in his wording, but he still manages to defame Eisenhower and plainly insinuate that Eisenhower was a traitor. The chapter title in which even the toned-down comments are made is: *The Word Is Treason*.

In the 1963 published edition which excises the comments on pages 266-268 just quoted above, there is a footnote on page 278 (footnote 2) and its text appears on pages cxxxviii-cxxxix at the back of the book. That text is as follows:

"At this point in the original manuscript there was one paragraph in which I expressed my own personal belief as to the most likely explanation of the events and actions with this document had tried to bring into focus. In a confidential

letter, neither published nor offered for sale, and restricted to friends who were expected to respect the confidence but offer me in exchange their own points of view, this seemed entirely permissible and proper. It does not seem so for an edition of the letter that is now to be published and given, probably, fairly wide distribution. So that paragraph, and two explanatory paragraphs, connected with it, have been omitted here. And the reader is left entirely free to draw his own conclusions."

Welch's explanation above for excising 3 paragraphs from the original unpublished version makes very little sense. The themes, arguments, evidence, premises, and conclusions contained in TP differ not one iota from themes, arguments, evidence, premises, and conclusions in official Birch Society literature from its inception.

Both attribute all of our nation's adversities and setbacks to conscious deliberate actions by numerous prominent Americans in Administrations since FDR [or even Wilson!] occupied the White House. Explanations of motivation always center around "*treason*" and "*conspiracy*" by numerous noxious, subversive, and unprincipled characters.

Consequently, the most reasonable inference for why Welch felt compelled to eliminate 3 paragraphs from the 1963 published edition of TP, is the same reason why Welch initially falsely claimed that his "private letter" had nothing to do with the JBS, namely, Welch thought excising the "offending" paragraphs would diminish negative publicity and retain those members (or prospective members) of the Birch Society who might be offended by such an unsparing denunciation and description of Eisenhower as an outright traitor and "*dedicated, conscious agent of the Communist conspiracy*."

To repeat Welch's rationale from page 267 of the unpublished version, he was trying to accommodate those persons who could not "*go all the way with me...to the final logical conclusion*."

By contrast, these comments by FBI Director J. Edgar Hoover:

"During his Presidency and afterwards at Gettysburg, I was close with Gen. Eisenhower. He was a great man and a great President." [01/72 interview with J. Edgar Hoover in *Nation's Business* magazine]

"My dear Mr. President: Many tributes and accolades are being paid you as you leave the highest office in the land, and although the FBI's voice in but one of millions, it nevertheless rings with sincerity and respect."

"Working under your brilliant leadership for two administrations has represented to us the fulfillment of many splendid opportunities to serve the best interests of our great country. Your keen insight and understanding of the crushing responsibilities faced by the Nation's criminal and subversive fighters have made our task easier."

"I personally am very grateful for your considerable interest in the FBI and its personnel. The staunchness of the FBI career service is only as strong as the enduring friendships we make throughout life. To borrow a phrase, to us you will never '*fade away*', but will always remain one of our brighter memories of service to God and country. With all good wishes...Sincerely, Edgar" [HQ 62-81742, #199 (1/18/61 J. Edgar Hoover letter to outgoing President Dwight D. Eisenhower)]

"I have received your letter dated September 25, 1963. Any rumors you have heard indicating the FBI has evidence that former President Dwight D. Eisenhower is a communist are completely false and too absurd to merit consideration." [HQ 62-81742, #263; 10/2/63 J. Edgar Hoover reply to inquiry about Eisenhower]

"Anybody who will allege that General Eisenhower was a Communist agent has something wrong with him. A lot of people read such allegations because I get some of the weirdest letters wanting to know whether we have inquired to find out whether that is true. I have known General Eisenhower quite well myself and I have found him to be a sound, level-headed man." [J. Edgar Hoover testimony before Warren Commission, Volume 5, page 101]

After senior FBI officials reviewed a 2/20/59 summary memo that had been prepared by the Boston field office concerning Welch's background as well as the copy of TP which they had received from Army Intelligence plus the

aforementioned Milwaukee field office report which seemed to suggest that Welch planned to create ostensible communist-front groups, Hoover approved dissemination of a SAC Letter to alert all 56 FBI field offices about Welch and the JBS:

"The personnel of your office should be made aware of Welch's activities and contemplated plans. You must be certain that your employees are alerted to promptly report to the Bureau any information concerning further activity by Welch in this regard. In the event information is received regarding any activity of Welch in the furtherance of setting his plan into operation, no investigation should be made but the Bureau should be promptly advised." [SAC Letter 59-13, 3/10/59]

By January 1960, several FBI field offices had reported to FBI HQ that they had obtained copies of TP. After receiving a radiogram from its Honolulu office, senior FBI officials commented:

"It appears Welch is beginning to give widespread distribution to *The Politician* and in view of the fact the John Birch Society is expanding its activities, it is believed we should furnish this data to the field in the form of a SAC Letter..." [HQ 62-104401, #40 and #41; 1/4/60 Honolulu FBI radiogram and 1/14/60 memo from F.J. Baumgardner to Alan Belmont, Domestic Intelligence Division.]

FBI HQ decided to notify all Special Agents in Charge of FBI field offices about the existence of *The Politician* manuscript:

"Welch has written a manuscript entitled '*The Politician*' which is a vicious attack on the political life and beliefs of President Eisenhower." The SAC Letter closes with the comment: "The Bureau is particularly interested in any efforts by subversive elements to takeover or use this Society or its chapters." [SAC Letter 60-5 dated 1/26/60]

THE POLITICIAN BECOMES PUBLIC

A series of articles by Chicago newspaperman, Jack Mabley, containing excerpts from TP, were published in Chicago's third largest circulation newspaper (*Chicago Daily News*) commencing July 25th 1960. Mabley's articles were published at the exact time that the GOP National Convention convened in Chicago to select their 1960 Presidential nominee. It was, to put it mildly, sensational news which ignited a firestorm within GOP circles. Mabley shared his copy of TP with other reporters and soon the content of TP was being revealed in newspapers all over the country.

See first two Mabley articles here:



In the Spring of 1961, Robert Welch publicly blamed "*the media*" for the controversy that re-erupted at that time over TP and he claimed that critics deliberately distorted what he wrote and they wrongly associated the Birch Society with the views expressed in his "*private letter*".

At that time, Mr. Welch claimed that his manuscript was circulated as nothing more than a numbered "*private letter*" which was "*on loan*" to interested, trustworthy individuals who would return it and keep it confidential.

Welch further claimed (falsely) that TP had no relationship to the John Birch Society since it was written long before the JBS was founded and it was unknown to almost all JBS members.

While it was true that TP was originally written before the JBS was founded and most JBS members were not aware of its existence, nevertheless, in the months immediately following the creation of the Birch Society, TP was used as a

recruitment tool for the Society and represented a "*higher truth*" which only certain "*advanced*" prospective members could be trusted to understand.

Robert Welch wrote letters in 1959-1960, to accompany copies of TP he mailed out, in which he solicited members for the Birch Society based upon their reading and acceptance of the themes, evidence, and arguments presented in TP.

For example, on August 27, 1959, the FBI's Chicago Field Office wrote a memo to J. Edgar Hoover pertaining to correspondence between Robert Welch and Dr. Hedwig S. Kuhn of Hammond, Indiana. Dr. Kuhn also provided nine enclosures which she received from Robert Welch.

Enclosure #4 is a 6/29/59 Welch letter on *American Opinion* letterhead in which Welch tells Dr. Kuhn that he will be sending her a copy of *The Politician* in a few days and Welch then solicits her support for the JBS and the JBS-front group, Committee Against Summit Entanglements (CASE). CASE was a Birch Society project to protest the visit of Soviet leader Nikita Khrushchev to the U.S.

The references to "*we*" and "*us*" and "*a movement*" in Welch's letter (excerpt below) obviously refer to the Birch Society. Louis Ruthenberg, whom Welch mentions, refers to a founding member of the Birch Society from Indiana who also served on the JBS National Council from its inception.

"In another few days we shall be sending you an unpublished manuscript of mine which is quite confidential, and which I believe you will find of considerable interest. It is not out of the category of '*simply more reading matter*' which you mention; but we shall be taking you up on the possibility of '*doing things for us*' within another few weeks. As my good friend, Louis Ruthenberg, may indicate to you, we have a movement under way of which you undoubtedly have heard nothing--because we are concentrating entirely on building strength and understanding, rather than creating noise -- of which he has been an enthusiastic supporter since it started last December and which already has local working chapters in four states. Since it really takes two full days to present properly the background, methods, and purposes of the John Birch Society, I should not attempt any explanation in a letter. But we shall see that you learn all about it as soon as is practicable, and as soon as there is any chance of our following up whatever interest you may have."



On July 7th, Dr. Kuhn acknowledged receiving her copy of TP. Then Dr. Kuhn asked Mr. Welch if she could share her copy of TP with another individual.

On July 16th, Welch responded and authorized Dr. Kuhn to permit Mr. Dean Mitchell to read her copy of TP (or if she preferred, RW offered to mail a copy to Mr. Mitchell).

In enclosure #5, (7/16/59 Welch letter to Dr. Kuhn) Welch describes *The Politician* to Dr. Kuhn with these words:

“The manuscript will not really give you any information concerning the John Birch Society, concerning which Mr. Carto has written you for me, but will at least give both you and Mr. Mitchell a better understanding of how serious is the danger we face, and how far advanced the conspiracy threatening us, as we see it. And you will then find that The John Birch Society is a movement, started quietly by this writer with a small group of leading industrialists who met with me in Indianapolis last December, for the purpose of building strength and understanding to combat this conspiracy – while avoiding publicity to the fullest extent possible, because creating noise is no part of our intention.”

In other words: read and believe TP and then join the JBS to do something about it!

Welch also told Dr. Kuhn that there were no immediate plans to form Indiana chapters of the JBS for a few months but Dr. Kuhn could become a Home Chapter member of the JBS—i.e. receive all her JBS member materials from their headquarters office in Belmont, MA. [HQ 62-104401-17, 8/27/59 SAC Chicago memo to J. Edgar Hoover with enclosures #4, #5, and #6; the same material may also be seen in Chicago FBI file 100-36671, serial #2].

By September 1959, senior Bureau officials were already commenting in their memos about Welch using TP as a recruitment tool for the JBS:

“From a review of the correspondence between (name deleted) and Welch, it appears that Welch may be using the John Birch Society in sending copies of *The Politician* to various individuals recommended to him or who he believes would be interested in its contents.” [HQ 62-104401, #23; 9/10/59 memo from Alan Belmont to F.J. Baumgardner –

FBI Domestic Intelligence Division.]

In July 1960, the Special-Agent-in-Charge of the FBI's Chicago Field Office sent a memo to Hoover which reported that three JBS recruitment meetings were held in the Chicago area according to a local informant. Then, "[informant name deleted] was given a copy of *The Politician* and told that the book is given out only when a member of the society is 'qualified.'" [HQ 62-104401, #123; 7/7/60 SAC Chicago memo to J. Edgar Hoover]

In September 1960, a detailed report by the Chicago district office of the Office of Naval Intelligence (ONI) discussed the relationship between *The Politician* and the JBS in the Chicago area along with comments made by a JBS National Council member, Stillwell J. Conner (his name is mis-spelled as "*Stilwell J. Connor*" in the ONI report excerpt quoted below):

"One publication authored by Welch that does not receive wide distribution except to Coordinators and leaders within the Society is *The Politician*. *The Politician* is a 302-page, black paperbound book, reproduced by the photo-offset process, with looseleaf binders. A copy of *The Politician* was reviewed at DIO-9ND [District Intelligence Office, 9th Naval District] and the general tenor is critical of such national leaders as President Eisenhower, General George C. Marshall, Allen and John F. Dulles, and Presidents Truman and Roosevelt. In various passages he accuses President Eisenhower of being a conscious Communist agent reporting to his Communist superior Dr. Milton Eisenhower. Other government leaders are disposed of as either conscious Communists or as tools and dupes of the Communists. A good example of the literary style employed by Welch is illustrated by quoting from page 17 of his book "*I defy anybody who is not actually a Communist himself, to read all of the known facts about his career and not decide that since at least sometime in the 1930's George Catlett Marshall has been a conscious, deliberate, dedicated agent of the Soviet conspiracy.*" In the same manner President Eisenhower is attacked throughout the book" ...

"Stilwell J. Connor, 6657 N. Sioux Avenue, Chicago, Illinois and his wife have been particularly active Coordinators for the John Birch Society in the Chicago area and specifically at Glenview, Illinois. [Name deleted] of Our Lady of Perpetual Help Church in Glenview has cooperated with Society Coordinators by calling special parish meetings for the purpose of organizing local chapters of the Society and extending the use of church buildings for holding such meetings. One such meeting held on July 11, 1960 attracted about 200 citizens to hear Connor present the views of Robert Welch via sound films and literature. One member of the audience asked about Welch's book, *The Politician*. Connor vehemently denied the existence of such a book whereupon the interested spectator produced the book and proceeded to read appropriate quotations for the benefit of Connor and his audience. Connor then admitted the existence of the book but reportedly said that the book was only for those who were properly guided within the Society. Connor reportedly remarked that to make the book available to the general membership without proper guidance would be analogous to permitting a first year medical student attempt to cure cancer. On another occasion a potential recruit of the Society was disillusioned after reading *The Politician* and expressed her disgust to Connor who cautioned her that if she ever revealed the nature of the book he would promptly discredit her and deny the existence of the book and its contents." [District Intelligence Office, Ninth Naval District – Chicago IL; 9/16/60 report captioned "*Ninth Naval District Subversive Trends of Current Interest, The John Birch Society*", pages 2-3]

The edition of the TP in the files of G-2 Army Intelligence that was obtained by the FBI was mailed by Welch in November 1958 and it has a typewritten postscript by Robert Welch on the last page (page 287) which reads as follows:

"Two years ago I gave up my business responsibilities, and am now devoting '*the whole of my life*' without any pay or the expectation of remuneration of any kind, to efforts to wake up my fellow citizens to the horror and the imminence of the Communist danger. If you would like to help me increase the reach and effectiveness of those efforts, there is a postscript to this manuscript which I shall be glad to send to any reader who requests it. RW"

What was "*the postscript*"? See next paragraph.

Revilo Oliver, one of the 11 persons invited by Welch to attend the founding meeting of the Birch Society in December 1958, (he also was an original member of the JBS National Council), wrote in his 1981 memoir that when he received his copy of Welch's "*private letter*" in October 1958, attached to it was "[a prospectus for the formation of a national society, then unnamed but later known as the John Birch Society, and for the promotion, as an instrument of that society, of the periodical, renamed *American Opinion*...](#)" [Revilo P. Oliver, *America's Decline: The Education of a Conservative*, Londinium Press, 1982, page 154]

Oliver reports that his edition of TP which he received October 1, 1958 was 304 pages. My copy (August 1958 edition) is 287 pages so it would appear that the "*prospectus*" regarding formation of what would become the Birch Society (and the use of *American Opinion* magazine as a JBS organ) may have been an additional 17 pages.

Moreover, with respect to the founding meeting of the Birch Society in Indianapolis in December 1958, Oliver contends:

"The fact was that *The Politician* had presumably been read, and had been at least tacitly approved by, every man present at the meeting in Indianapolis, and was so far from having been '*disavowed*' by anyone (except, possibly, in private comments of which I had no knowledge) that I recommended then and later that no one who had not read and approved the document should be admitted to membership in the Birch Society." [Ibid, page 158]

According to Oliver's recollection, "[Members of the \(JBS National\) Council were requested, and members of the salaried staff were instructed](#)" to endorse "[falsehoods](#)" about TP after the controversy erupted in Spring of 1961. [Ibid, page 158]

In private, Robert Welch blamed the debacle over his "*private letter*" on someone whom he had recommended to JBS members as an ally and about whom most JBS members had a very favorable opinion, namely, Frederick C. Schwarz of Christian Anti-Communism Crusade.

According to Welch, Schwarz was responsible for providing a copy of TP to a Chicago newspaperman (Jack Mabley of the *Chicago Daily News*), via one of Schwarz's functionaries, and it was the subsequent unfavorable publicity resulting from Chicago and Milwaukee newspaper articles plus wire service reports that caused Welch so much grief.

Welch was furious with Schwarz for his role in releasing *The Politician*. In a blistering 9-page letter to Schwarz, Welch made it clear how deeply hurt he was by Schwarz's behavior.

At the beginning of his letter, Welch reports several instances where anti-Communists had bad-mouthed and "*knifed*" both Welch and the JBS in the past. But, Welch pointed out, that he and the JBS had "[given specific instructions to our men in the field...to praise and support Fred Schwarz's activities at every turn](#)" and "[I believe that this policy and these instructions have been universally observed.](#)"

"During the last few months, however, we now know that you personally have repeatedly been making extremely derogatory remarks about myself and The John Birch Society, to various groups and audiences; and that you have been reading from my private manuscript, called *The Politician* to support your disparaging remarks. We know that you have privately said things about me and the Society, to important conservative leaders, which -- in some cases anyway --- has caused those leaders to discontinue strong support which was already being given us by their organizations."

"But most important of all it was one of your men in Chicago, a close associate of yours and a life member of your organization, who deliberately set off the publicity about *The Politician* which has caused such furore in several Midwestern papers and at some other points in the country. This man had '*dropped in*' on the meetings of some of our chapters in Greater Chicago--even though doing so required a two-hour trip, both ways, to and from his home --- for the ostensible reason that he was going to join whatever chapter was the most convenient for himself...Then, after our films had been shown, and at the psychological time to do the most possible damage, this man got up and read at length from *The Politician*, exhibited the copy he had with him, and otherwise tossed as harmful a bombshell as he possibly could into the proceedings. Apparently, Jack Mabley, the *Chicago Daily News* columnist, was in that audience by previous arrangement. At any rate, there is little doubt that the copy of *The Politician* which your man displayed at that meeting was turned over to Mabley as the basis of the vicious part of his two articles -- and then sent by Mabley to Alexander Dobish of the *Milwaukee Journal* for the articles that followed..." [Welch letter dated 9/6/60, to Dr. Fred Schwarz, Christian Anti-Communism Crusade, pages 3-4, copy in my possession.]

Welch then spends considerable space discussing what could be reasons to explain what he considered Schwarz's betrayal. Welch reveals the degree to which the unfavorable publicity hurt him:

"Disagreement is one thing, outside of the Communist world itself, or in relation to the Communists, (but) vindictive destructiveness towards those with whom we disagree -- especially if they have the same ultimate purposes as ourselves -- is quite another." [Ibid, page 8]

See entire text of Welch letter to Schwarz in Chapter 9 of this Report i.e. "*Documentary History of the JBS*" here:

<https://sites.google.com/site/ernie1241a/>

Chapter 1

FBI EVALUATIONS OF ROBERT WELCH

and THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY

In March and April 1961, news reports circulated among top Bureau officials concerning the growth and activities of the JBS around the country. In addition, Bureau officials wrote memos which discussed the increasing number of inquiries received by the Bureau from alarmed citizens, politicians, and newspaper reporters concerning Birch Society

activities and publications.

Many letter-writers asked the Bureau to comment upon whether or not the conclusions disseminated by the Birch Society were accurate. Others simply asked if the Bureau considered the JBS to be a patriotic and legitimate anti-Communist organization.

See, for example the following incoming correspondence addressed to Hoover:

- inquiry about whether or not article in *American Opinion* magazine by J.B. Matthews was factual and asking Hoover if AO was a reliable publication. [HQ 62-104401, #9; 2/21/59]
- complaint that Birchers “are very sincere in their efforts but resort to a great deal of fear talk in their discussions. It is hard for me to believe that so many of our wonderful leaders are ‘pink,’” [HQ 62-104401, #14, 4/9/59 letter to Hoover].
- Inquiry from Hartford CT resident asking for background information about the JBS because concerned that it might be a “*subversive front group*” [HQ 62-104401, #16; 8/1/59 letter to Hoover.]
- Request for background on JBS: “I am interested to know if this group is subversive or extremist in any way. The local leaders of this group have also headed several other ‘hate’ organizations which are, in my mind, definitely anti-American.” [HQ 62-104401, #32; 12/29/59 letter to Hoover.]
- Complaint regarding type of material JBS disseminating. Letter writer tells Hoover she has read the JBS *Blue Book*, “*but it was filled with statements for which I could find no factual backing, hence I did not put much stock in it.*” Then writer reports that her daughter has been influenced by reading JBS literature and daughter believes newspapers don’t print “truth” because “they are all ‘red’ and will not print the truth.” Writer compares JBS technique “to what Goebbels did...prior to the outbreak of World War II...Frankly, this whole matter smells to me of the possibility that the Commies are promoting this to discredit our leaders, including the President, that they deliberately are trying to instill fear in the hearts of Americans, that by 1965, the Commies are going to takeover, that it is inevitable, and try and stampede people into giving up.” Writer then asks Hoover to help “get my daughter straightened out so she will not lose her mind worrying about what is going to happen by 1965.” [HQ 62-104401, #35, 12/28/59 letter to Hoover.]
- Inquiry from someone who read JBS reprint “*To A Good American*”: “The letter sounds as if it may be from a Communist-front organization”. [HQ 62-104401, #37; 1/3/60 letter to Hoover.]
- Writer concerned about “the alarming condition of Communist control in this country” and then asks if JBS can be recommended. [62-104401, #51; 2/3/60 letter to Hoover]
- Dentist letter asking Hoover if he endorsed the JBS since the JBS magazine “has claimed strongly that fluoridation of municipal water supplies was promoted by and is a part of the communist conspiracy. Since I am a dentist and have supported fluoridation strongly, I find this almost inconceivable.” [HQ 62-104401, #75; 4/4/60 letter to Hoover.]
- Houston informant who attended JBS meeting stated: “Several in the group have become quite disturbed

over the information put out by the Society and have become confused as to just what is the truth regarding the present Communist situation in the United States and just what action they should take...She advised that the [JBS] leaders point out that if President Eisenhower goes to the Summit Meeting, he will sell the U.S. out to the communists and the communists will takeover the U.S. in about three years and everyone in this country except the communists will be in slave labor camps." [HQ 62-104401, #94; 5/3/60, SAC Houston to Hoover.]

EARLY FBI MEMOS ON WELCH AND JBS

Two FBI memos in particular reveal the attitude of top Bureau officials concerning Welch and the JBS. In the first memo, Assistant Director C.D. DeLoach is informed about two letters that the Bureau received from persons expressing concern about charges made by JBS members in their communities.

"The Bureau has, of course, been cognizant over a period of time of the many fanatical right-wing anti-Communist organizations which are presently spreading widely throughout the country and of their utterly absurd viewpoints. For your information, I am attaching copies of letters dated March 6 and 8, 1961 from (names deleted for privacy) which typify the absolute confusion and lack of confidence in American institutions and one's fellow man being caused by representatives of such organizations." [HQ 62-104401-789, March 15, 1961, D.C. Morrell to C.D. DeLoach].

The letters attached to the memo concern two Birch Society officials. (1) Retired U.S. Air Force Brig. General William L. Lee, the Birch Society Coordinator in Amarillo Texas, and (2) Fred Koch, a JBS National Council member from Wichita KS.

Both Koch and Lee had made what the FBI considered inflammatory comments about Communist infiltration of our society. Fred Koch had stated in speeches that U-2 pilot Francis Gary Powers was in collusion with the Soviets, and had not been shot down but landed safely and was paid by the Soviet government.

General Lee was a prominent exponent of the notion that our nation's clergy and religious institutions had been extensively infiltrated by Communists and Communist sympathizers. He was particularly critical of the National Council of Churches of Christ. .

In the second memo, Chief Inspector W.C. Sullivan informs Alan H. Belmont (Assistant to the Director, in charge of the Bureau's Domestic Intelligence Division) about a *Time* magazine article entitled "*The Americanists*" which discussed the Birch Society.

Sullivan characterized the article as a "succinct picture of a lunatic-fringe type of organization that is doing more harm than good with a professional anticommunist attack on everything and everyone opposing its own dictatorial policies."

Sullivan then compared JBS to the Communist Party USA, "...both of which exist under the hard-boiled dictatorial direction of one man, both of which have cells in various cities throughout the country, and both of which operate effectively through front organizations in a militant manner that is barely a goose step away from the formation of goon squads."

Sullivan concluded his memo with the following observation about the JBS:

"The supporters of this organization and those influenced by the vicious propaganda it has been putting out are typical of the fanatics who have been attempting lately to disparage and discredit Bureau speakers who have been giving

audiences a true, factual picture concerning the nature of the threat which communist activities in this country represent." [HQ 62-104401-791, March 9, 1961, W.C. Sullivan to A.H. Belmont].

The problem which Sullivan mentioned (attacks on FBI speakers) reached a peak in the Fall of 1961. J. Edgar Hoover approved Sullivan's proposal that he make several speeches around the country to address extreme right charges that our clergy and religious institutions (especially the Methodist Church) were significantly influenced or controlled by subversives.

In December 1961, J. Edgar Hoover met with Charles Bacon, the National Commander of the American Legion. During this meeting, Hoover expressed his concern over "extremists of the right-wing and the harm such groups were doing to our fight against communism" and he specifically referred to extreme right-wing attacks upon FBI speakers. Right-wing extremists disseminated false assertions regarding "the extent of infiltration into the clergy." See Chapter 3 of this Report for discussion of this topic. Below is a copy of the memo which summarizes Hoover's concern over right-wing extremists.

UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
Memorandum
TO : Mr. Mohr
FROM : J. Edgar Hoover
SUBJECT: CHARLES BACON
NATIONAL COMMANDER
THE AMERICAN LEGION

DATE: December 5, 1961

The Director, by previous arrangements, saw Charles Bacon, National Commander, Mr. William F. Black and [redacted] who travel with Commander Bacon at 10:00 a.m., 12-4-61. I introduced them together to the Director.

The Director expressed appreciation to Commander Bacon for the excellent assistance afforded the FBI in the past by The American Legion. Commander Bacon responded by stating he sincerely hoped the Director would call upon him in the future. He spoke of the Legion's great admiration for the Director.

The Director generally discussed matters of a public nature where regarding internal security. He told Commander Bacon and his party of his feelings regarding extremists of the right wing and the harm that such groups were doing to our fight against communism. The Director again mentioned that The American Legion had always been in the front of the battle against communism and he felt this battle should be continued. Commander Bacon assured him that it would be.

The Director briefly mentioned the attacks made upon Attorney General Sullivan and other FBI speakers because of not agreeing with the extremists to the extent of infiltration into the clergy. The Director spoke generally of a number of personalities, among the clergy and otherwise, who have aided the communists in their fight not have members of the Communist Party. He referred to Fidel Castro and the manner in which Castro had taken over from dictator Juan Fulgencio Y. Cárdenas. The Director said that Commander Bacon of the FBI had been a witness of the control of Castro and the manner in which Castro had taken over the government in Cuba. The Director dwelt at some length on Castro's latest revolution stating his personal connections with all along.

On leaving, Commander Bacon expressed the hopes of The American Legion that the Director would consent to be their principal speaker at the 1962 convention in Las Vegas the early part of October, 1962. The Director indicated a desire to comply with this request if at all possible. Commander Bacon again expressed his appreciation to the Director for the fight against communism and the FBI against the members of the United States Communist Party. The Director thanked Commander Bacon for his commendatory words and stated he should call upon him if he could be of any assistance.

1 - Mr. Jones
JUL 19 1962

In November 1970, Hoover met with Alfred B. Chamie, the new National Commander of the American Legion. During this meeting: "The Director made mention of the John Birch Society and noted that this organization's leadership has mislead (sic) some good and well intended people. In this regard the Director cited the scurrilous allegations that Robert Welch made some years ago concerning the loyalty of the late General Eisenhower and the late John Foster Dulles, as examples of the type of disgraceful activity in which the leadership of the John Birch Society has been known to indulge." [HQ 94-1-17998, #1950, 11/5/70 memo from M.A. Jones to Mr. Bishop regarding Hoover meeting with Alfred P. Chamie.]

Birch Society representatives around the country often made requests for large quantities of FBI publications that they wished to distribute to the public. At first, the Bureau readily provided bulk quantities, but as the Bureau became more familiar with the ideology espoused by the JBS, it underwent a dramatic change of mind.

In March 1961, for example, FBI Assistant Director C.D. DeLoach prepared a memo concerning one particular JBS request which was made to the Los Angeles Field Office. Assistant-Special Agent-In-Charge William Alexander had been requested to provide 10,000 copies of a Bureau poster entitled "*What You Can Do To Fight Communism*".

DeLoach noted that "Alexander was advised that in view of the extremist position taken by this group that we should not, of course, have anything to do with them and that obviously they were attempting to capitalize on the Director's prestige...This is the group whose magazine carried the article that up to 80% of the top officials of DHEW are communists or under communist influence. They have accused former President Eisenhower of being a communist dupe and have called for the impeachment of the Supreme Court and have made similar ridiculous allegations." [DHEW refers to Department of Health, Education, Welfare.]

In his concluding "Recommendation" paragraph, DeLoach wrote:

"In view of this irresponsible organization's attempt to capitalize on the Bureau's prestige, it is recommended that an SAC Letter be prepared instructing the field that no Bureau publications of any kind are to be made available to this group or any of its representatives...The field should be told that requests for any attempts to reproduce Bureau publications by the John Birch Society group should be turned down." [HQ 62-104401-851, March 14, 1961, C.D. DeLoach to J. Mohr].

In a handwritten comment on the memo, J. Edgar Hoover wrote "YES" on the recommendation and, subsequently, the SAC Letter (HQ instructions to all of its Special-Agent-In-Charge of field offices) was sent to all FBI field offices. It advised the field offices:

"You should be alert to the possibility that this group may attempt to reproduce Bureau publications and distribute them giving the impression that the FBI sanctions JBS. Immediately advise the Bureau of any such information coming to your attention. Further, any requests by JBS to reproduce Bureau publications should be turned down." [SAC Letter 61-14, dated 3/21/61, section D].

A March 29, 1961 FBI memo discusses whether or not the Bureau should respond to a recent incoming letter from Robert Welch. The memo describes Welch as follows:

"He has extreme views, is very opinionated and both he and the JBS are particularly controversial in much of the country at this time."

The recommendation was: "That the letters from Robert Welch of JBS dated 3/22-23/61 not be acknowledged."

Hoover wrote "OK" on the memo and Associate Director Clyde Tolson wrote "I agree".

In an April 1961 memo from J. Edgar Hoover to Attorney General Robert Kennedy, Hoover explained how the FBI responded to inquiries it received about the JBS and he then added the following comment which reveals his thinking about the JBS:

"However, in the Introduction to the *FBI Law Enforcement Bulletin* dated 4/1/61, I specifically pointed out the need for an objective and dispassionate approach in fighting the communist menace. I felt this step was necessary because of the rash of vigilante-type individuals and organizations springing up throughout the country which tend to depart from

fact and use gossip, hearsay, and unsubstantiated charges in fighting communism. In the long run, such tactics will hinder rather than help in this fight." [HQ 62-104401, #990, 4/5/61, J. Edgar Hoover to Attorney General Robert Kennedy.]

In October 1961, J. Edgar Hoover told Attorney General Robert Kennedy about a 9/27/61 briefing on communism given at FBI headquarters to the American Bar Association Committee on Communist Tactics, Strategy and Objectives.

The Attorney General praised this activity and he then asked J. Edgar Hoover to consider a proposal for expanding such instruction to include FBI seminars on communism at FBI field offices for high school students and college freshmen "to create a nucleus of informed students to help offset and combat the Communist drive for young members and to start the development of responsible and informed community leaders."

The idea was to set up such seminars along the lines of what the Bureau did at the FBI National Academy for law enforcement officers from around the country. The Bureau's Domestic Intelligence Division subsequently analyzed this proposal in a 10/28/61 memo. The memo contains a paragraph entitled "*Arguments in Favor*" – copied below. Notice the reference to the JBS.

"Unquestionably there are apparent arguments in favor of such a procedure, including the reaching of a large segment of the American public during their formative years and thus thwarting to a great extent current recruiting drives among youths by the Communist Party USA, and combating the growth of extreme rightists as exemplified by the John Birch Society." [HQ 62-106364, #72, 10/28/61 memo from Mr. Sullivan to Mr. Belmont, page 1; my emphasis in red font]

In May 1961, a JBS member wrote to Hoover to inquire whether or not a news report concerning an April 1961 speech in Tacoma WA by Chief Inspector W.C. Sullivan was accurate. The JBS member described Sullivan's remarks in the news article as "amazing". The comments by Sullivan which most disturbed the Bircher were:

"Communism has failed to make an impact on American education despite making teachers and students prime propaganda targets since 1919."

Hoover replied to this JBS member as follows:

"Your concern about communism is understandable. I feel strongly that members of the CP and its sympathizers in the U.S. represent a threat to our future security and...patriotic Americans must continue to take a firm stand against this menace...It is equally vital that this opposition be careful, constructive and positive...This is no time for rumors, unfounded suspicion, gossip and the hurling of false allegations...I am thoroughly familiar with Chief Inspector William C. Sullivan's presentation of the true nature and objectives of communism. He treated the subject with all possible objectivity, candor, and accuracy." [HQ 62-104401, #1261, 5/4/61 incoming letter from JBS member and J. Edgar Hoover 5/15/61 reply]

In July 1961 the Bureau received a letter from Arthur S. Lyon who was a North Carolina JBS Coordinator. Lyon implored Hoover to make a statement about the JBS in view of "a cruel and continuous smear campaign since it began its attempt to impeach Earl Warren." The Bureau reply has a notation on the file copy that Lyon was not being sent any publications since he was a JBS employee. A subsequent letter from Lyon was disregarded because he was identified as a JBS Coordinator. [HQ 62-104401, #1377, 7/24/61 letter from Arthur S. Lyon and #1557, 12/18/61.]

J. Edgar Hoover spoke before, and received numerous accolades and awards from, scores of organizations. One particular Hoover speech in December 1961 disturbed a considerable number of JBS members or sympathizers and they wrote to Hoover to ask if newspaper accounts of his speech were accurate, and if so, they asked Hoover for clarification of his remarks.

The speech, entitled "*The Faith To Be Free*" was a fairly standard Hoover pep talk about the strengths of our country as well as a fairly typical Hoover warning about the dangers which criminal elements and subversives posed within American society. Nevertheless, Birchers expressed concern about the following Hoover comments which contradicted standard JBS dogma and/or which Birchers assumed Hoover directed at groups like the JBS---even though he mentioned no names.

"The extent of the menace posed by the philosophy of communism is clear-cut and obvious. However, it is absolutely necessary that we attack and oppose it calmly, rationally and objectively...The Communist Party in this country has attempted to infiltrate and subvert every segment of our society. The Party's efforts have been thwarted in this country by the Government's internal security programs, by investigation, arrest and prosecution of Party functionaries, and by widespread intelligent public opposition to the communist philosophy." ...

"Let us be for America all the way; but, at the same time, let us not be taken in by those who promote hysteria by the distortion and misrepresentation of the true facts whether they be the proponents of chauvinism of the extreme right or pseudo liberalism of the extreme left." [J. Edgar Hoover, *The Faith To Be Free*, 12/7/61 remarks upon receiving the Criss Award, pages 5 and 7.]

One self-identified JBS member criticized the Hoover speech reference to the "[extreme right](#)" because he (correctly) thought Hoover was referring to groups like the JBS plus he thought Hoover's comments would "[put the few alert patriots back in a coma...so the Socialist New Frontiersmen and U.N. one worlders can takeover soon.](#)" The file copy of the Bureau reply to his letter has the following notation: "[In view of his sarcastic remarks, his muddled thinking and his dogmatic views, it is not felt his letter should be acknowledged.](#)" [HQ 62-104401, #1644, 2/20/62 incoming letter from JBS member.]

Another Bircher wrote to Hoover and described himself as "[confused](#)" by Hoover's comments. Hoover offered this clarification in his reply:

"I firmly believe that it is vital that each of us make a determined effort to gain a broad knowledge of the objectives and operations of the communist conspiracy so that we may effectively resist its influence. This will help to avoid the danger of confusing communism with legitimate dissent. To erroneously brand an individual as a communist is to do a grave injustice. It is imperative that we remain calm, rational, and thoroughly accurate in what we say and do in opposing this subversive philosophy. This is no time for rumors, unfounded suspicion, gossip, or the hurling of false accusations." [HQ 62-104401, #1657, 2/27/62 Hoover reply to JBS member.]

There are numerous similar instances where self-identified Birch Society members wrote letters to Hoover but the Bureau chose not to acknowledge receipt or reply to them because comments made by JBS partisans were considered irrational and extremist in tone and substance.

The FBI's Dallas office received reports that JBS members in the Dallas area had claimed that the FBI was supporting

JBS activities. Hoover instructed the Dallas office to contact source(s) of that report and they "should be told in no uncertain terms to cease and desist from making any statements such as those set out above...indicating the Bureau is in agreement with or in back of any of their activities." [HQ 62-104401, #1443, 9/19/61, SAC Dallas to Hoover and 9/29/61 Hoover reply.]

On April 17, 1962, Congressman Claude Pepper of Florida ran an advertisement in the *Miami News* captioned "*Birchites Are Behind The Smear Against Claude Pepper*". The Bureau received an inquiry asking whether or not Director Hoover had approved use of his name in the advertisement as one of several prominent persons who had spoken out against "smear tactics of these irresponsible fanatics who are the major internal enemies of our country".

At the bottom of a Bureau memo discussing the matter, Hoover handwrote: "I would no more give a boost to Pepper than I would to the Birchites. They are two extremes and equally bad." [HQ 62-104401, no serial #, April 27, 1962, D.C. Morrell to C.D. DeLoach]. See Hoover comment below in right corner of memo.



The Bureau received thousands of inquiries about the Birch Society and the numerous allegations made in its literature or in speeches/interviews by its officials and members. The Bureau developed several standard replies to answer people who wanted to know Director Hoover's evaluation about the John Birch Society and its founder, Robert Welch.

One of the standard replies was based upon comments made by Hoover at a press conference on November 18, 1964. The main focus of the press conference was Hoover's evaluation of the Warren Commission Report which had just been released. This was also the press conference where Hoover made his famous comment that Martin Luther King Jr. was "the most notorious liar in the country". Many newspapers reported Hoover's remarks on the Warren Commission report and MLK Jr. but ignored Hoover's remarks on Welch which were as follows:

"Personally, I have little respect for the head of the John Birch Society since he linked the names of former President Dwight D. Eisenhower, the late John Foster Dulles, and former CIA Director Allen Dulles with communism." [HQ 62-104401, #2381, 11/20/64 and HQ 100-114578-152, October 22, 1965 and 62-104401, #3865, 3/24/72.]

NOTE: With respect to former Secretary of State John Foster Dulles, Robert Welch described Dulles in his 1950's manuscript, *The Politician*, on page 166 as "this Kremlin-serving hypocrite" and then later summarized his contempt for Dulles:

"For many reasons and after a lot of study, I personally believe Dulles to be a Communist agent who has had

one clearly defined role to play; namely, always to say the right things and always to do the wrong ones."

[Robert Welch, *The Politician*, chapter 16, "Associates and Appointments", bottom of page 223; privately printed, 1963.]

The FBI evaluation of Dulles appears in a December 1955 memo from Assistant Director Milton A. Jones to Assistant Director Louis B. Nichols. In a section of that memo captioned "**Attitude of Communists Toward Dulles**", Jones observed: **"Dulles continues to be a Communist symbol of capitalist reaction. He is constantly under attack by the Communist press and individual Party members..."**

The memo then presents numerous examples of Communist hostility toward Dulles. See pages 33-34 of the Dulles-FBI file (HQ 62-84466, serial #11, dated 12/20/55) -- link below

<https://archive.org/stream/DullesJohnFosterHQ1/Dulles%2C%20John%20Foster-HQ-1#page/n31/mode/2up>

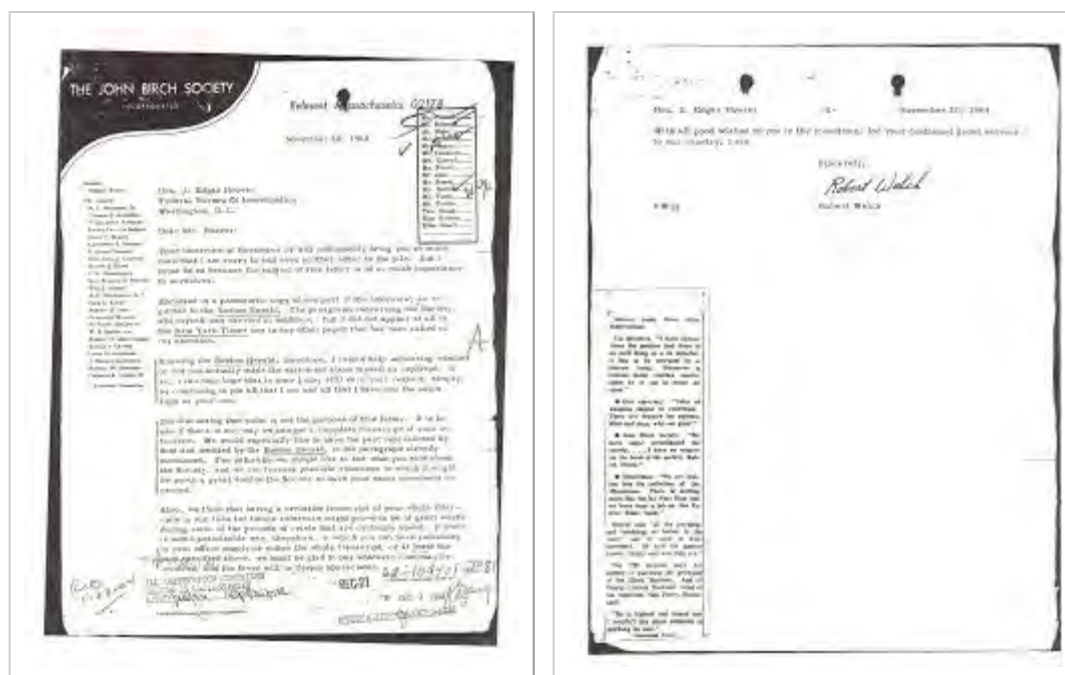
Associate Director Clyde Tolson recognizing the impact that Hoover's hostile comment about Welch would have and anticipating the probable deluge of inquiries about it, suggested standard wording for all Bureau replies. Hoover wrote "Yes" and initialed the memo (see HQ 62-104401, #2359, 11/20/64 Tolson to Hoover).

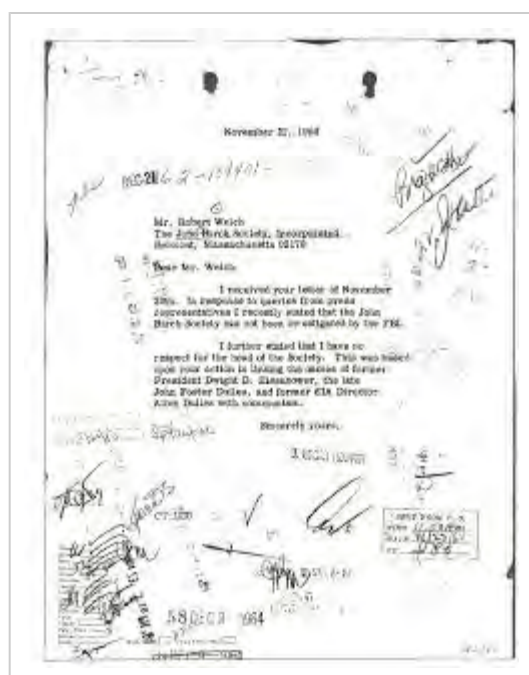
See copy of this memo here:

https://archive.org/stream/foia_John_Birch_Society-HQ-37/John_Birch_Society-HQ-37#page/n27/mode/2up

JBS Public Relations Director John Rousselot and Robert Welch both wrote to Hoover to inquire if press reports about his comments were accurate. Welch wrote on 11/20/64 (serial #2381). He said he read Hoover's comments in the Boston newspaper and "I can only hope that in time I may still earn your respect, simply by continuing to put all that I am and that I have into the same fight as your own."

Below is Robert Welch's letter to Hoover and Hoover's 11/23/64 reply:





Also see Hoover's testimony (copied below) before the Warren Commission [Volume V, page 101—link provided below; scroll to bottom of page] when he was asked about an article on JFK's assassination that was published in the JBS magazine, *American Opinion*.

<http://www.jfk-assassination.de/warren/wch/vol5/page101.php>

Significantly, Hoover ignored the specific question he was asked and, instead, used the inquiry as an opportunity to characterize Robert Welch and the JBS as "extremist" without mentioning their names:

"Mr. Hoover: I have read that piece. My comment on it is this in general: I think the extreme right is just as much a danger to the freedom of this country as the extreme left. There are groups, organizations, and individuals on the extreme right who make these very violent statements, allegations that General Eisenhower was a Communist, disparaging references to the Chief Justice and at the other end of the spectrum you have these leftists who make wild statements charging almost anybody with being a Fascist or belonging to some of these so-called extreme right societies. "

"Now, I have felt, and I have said publicly in speeches, that they are just as much a danger, at either end of the spectrum. They don't deal with facts. Anybody who will allege that General Eisenhower was a Communist agent, has something wrong with him. A lot of people read such allegations because I get some of the weirdest letters wanting to know whether we have inquired to find out whether that is true. I have known General Eisenhower quite well myself and I have found him to be a sound, level-headed man."

The FBI often had very negative evaluations about the post-FBI endeavors of its former security informants or Special Agents who subsequently attached themselves to the JBS as members, endorsers, speakers, or authors. Examples include former FBI Special Agents Dan Smoot and W. Cleon Skousen. [See chapter 7 of this Report for more details as well as my separate reports on both Smoot and Skousen.]

In September 1961, conservative columnist George Sokolsky wrote a column entitled "*The Crackpots*" which addressed the danger to the conservative and anti-communist movements presented by former FBI Special Agents who associated themselves with right-wing extremist groups such as the Birch Society.

In his column, Sokolsky observed: "Particularly offensive are some who call themselves former FBI agents, thus giving to themselves labels which provide the appearance of special knowledge...Naturally, it is an advantage to a man to have served in the FBI but like all organizations, it has men on top and men who never rise; it has men who are efficient and those who have to be let out because they do not make good. Employment by the FBI is not a permanent badge of efficiency, knowledge, or responsibility. When a fellow advertises himself as a former FBI agent, the proper inquiry should be, *why former?* The reason I emphasize this point is that there is an upsurge of conservatism in this country and there are many opportunists who jump on the conservative bandwagon and who claim special knowledge and special advantages."

Upon reading the Sokolsky column J. Edgar Hoover sent Sokolsky a letter which expressed

"...my sincere congratulations for your great column [*"The Crackpots"*] of September 5. It is time someone set the record straight by exposing these opportunists who capitalize on their former employment with this Bureau. Motivated by selfish ambition, they exploit the name and record of the FBI achieved through the years by the diligent effort and self-sacrifice of so many loyal men and women. My associates and I deeply appreciate your excellent treatment of this matter..." [HQ 62-89885, #209, 9/6/61 J, Edgar Hoover to George Sokolsky.]

In September 1965, James D. Bales, Professor of Christian Doctrine at Harding College (Searcy AR), sought permission from the FBI to publish a compilation of J. Edgar Hoover's public comments about Communism but Hoover refused to authorize such a publication.

One FBI memo reports that Bales had written to Robert Welch to inquire if the JBS publishing house (Western Islands) would be interested in publishing such a compilation of Hoover's comments about communism, entitled "*J. Edgar Hoover on Communism*". Robert Welch was enthusiastic and the JBS drew up a contract with Bales. A JBS representative met with an FBI Special Agent in Boston to discuss the idea. [HQ 62-104401, #3151; 6/26/67 memo from R.E. Wick to Assistant Director Cartha D. DeLoach, page 1.]

Page 2 of the memo has the following summary of the 1965 contact by Bales:

"In a memorandum prepared at this time, it was noted that Bales corresponded frequently with the Bureau and that Harding College is well known as a right-wing anticommunist center (and) is a source of extremist-type literature in the field of anti-communism. It was noted that it would be highly unwise for the Director to be associated publicly with Harding College."

Bales sent a letter to J. Edgar Hoover dated 9/14/66 stating that despite the FBI's rejection of his proposal, he intended to go forward with it because Hoover's comments were already in the public domain. The FBI memo then observes:

"Following receipt of the above letter from Bales, he was removed from the Special Correspondents' List and he was again told the Director could not give any permission to either publish this manuscript as a book or to circulate it in any manner."

Page 3 of memo "*Observations and Recommendation*" observes:

"It is felt the Director should remain firm in continuing to deny Bales and also the JBS permission to publish excerpts from the Director's quotations on communism. It is not felt that such a book could possibly give a balanced view of the Director's statements and in view of the extremist position taken by both Bales and the Birch Society, it is anticipated that the Director could be subject to public criticism by any implied association with Bales and the Birch Society."

Chapter 2

FBI vs. JBS EVALUATION OF INTERNAL SECURITY STATUS OF U.S.

During the 1960's and subsequently, the essence of John Birch Society thought was that a vast conspiracy of Communists, Communist sympathizers, and Communist dupes and agents made substantial inroads into all areas of U.S. society.

In 1967 for example, the Birch Society reprinted, in pamphlet form, a section from a *JBS Bulletin* entitled "*This Is It!*" JBS founder/leader Robert Welch declared on page 5:

"Finally...let us re-assert with reluctance and regret but with complete assurance, that Communists now are, and for several years have been, in full working control of our federal government.."

The annual Birch Society "*Scoreboard*" issue of *American Opinion* magazine, reported in three consecutive years that the extent of such Communist influence and control had reached a staggering 50-70% level of success and in 1964 reached 60-80%. [*American Opinion Scoreboard* issues, July-August 1961, 1962, 1963, 1964].

At about this time, Congressman Carl Elliott of Alabama wrote to Hoover to request a statement concerning the status of our internal security. Hoover's response to Elliott was published as a letter-to-the-Editor in the *Tri-Cities Daily* of Sheffield, Alabama on Sunday March 31, 1963 and variations of its wording became the standard Bureau reply to incoming inquiries from persons alarmed by Birch Society assertions:

"The Communist Party in this country has attempted to infiltrate and subvert every segment of our society, but its continuing efforts have not achieved success of any substance. Too many self-styled experts on communism, without valid credentials and without any access whatsoever to classified factual data regarding the inner workings of the conspiracy, have engaged in rumor-mongering and hurling false and wholly unsubstantiated allegations against persons whose views differ from their own. This is dangerous business. It is divisive and unintelligent, and makes more difficult the task of the professional investigator."

[Also see identical or comparable Hoover statements in February 5, 1962 letter 94-1-369-1676 to Mrs. W.R. Brown of Bountiful Utah as well as July 29, 1964 letter HQ 62-109421-44 and August 6, 1964 letter HQ 62-100942-156. Also see Hoover "*Faith To Be Free*" speech, 12/7/61, p5]

In his letter to Mrs. Brown, Hoover expanded upon the comments he subsequently wrote to Congressman Elliott:

"All this has been accomplished in orderly constitutional fashion and is something of which every American should be proud. We must continue to be alert to these infiltration efforts. I wish to emphasize most strongly that communism is a grave threat to the continued existence of the United States. Because of this, it is doubly imperative that we be calm,

rational, and thoroughly accurate in what we say and do in opposing communism. This is no time for rumors, unfounded suspicions, gossip and the hurling of false accusations."

During 1961 and 1962 Hoover went on the record numerous times to warn against the dangers of extremism. In an obvious reference to groups like the JBS, Hoover made comments such as the following:

"Our fight against communism must be a sane, rational understanding of the facts. Emotional outbursts, extravagant name-calling, gross exaggerations hinder our efforts. We must remember that many noncommunists may legitimately on their own oppose the same laws or take positions on issues of the day which are also held by the communists. Their opinions—though temporarily coinciding with the Party line—do not make them communists. Not at all. We must be very careful with our facts and not brand as a communist any individual whose opinion may be different from our own. Freedom of dissent is a great heritage of America which we must treasure."

"Today, far too many self-styled experts on communism are plying the highways of America giving erroneous and distorted information. This causes hysteria, false alarms, misplaced apprehension by many of our citizens. We need enlightenment about communism---but this information must be factual, accurate and not tailored to echo personal idiosyncrasies. To quote an old aphorism, we need more light and less heat." [J. Edgar Hoover, *Shall It Be Law or Tyranny?*, *American Bar Association Journal*, February 1962, page 120]

"Unfortunately, there are those who make the very mistake the Communists are so careful to avoid. These individuals concentrate on the negative rather than on the positive. They are merely against communism without being for any positive measures to eliminate the social, political, and economic frictions which the Communists are so adroit at exploiting. These persons would do well to recall a recent lesson from history. Both Hitler and Mussolini were against communism. However, it was by what they stood for, not against, that history has judged them." [U.S. Senate Committee on the Judiciary. Subcommittee To Investigate The Administration of the Internal Security Act and Other Internal Security Laws, *The Communist Party Line*, 1961, page 6]

"There exists today in our land a vital 'rift' which the communists are exploiting. Unfortunately, this involves certain people across the country who engage in reckless charges against one another. The label of 'communist' is too often indiscriminately attached to those whose views differ from the majority...Attributing every adversity to communism is not only irrational, but contributes to hysteria and fosters groundless fears...This is neither the time for inaction nor vigilante action..." [FBI Law Enforcement Bulletin, Hoover's Introductory Message, April 1961.]

"Here are some suggestions for individuals and organizations wishing to aid the FBI in the internal security field...Be sure to report all facts in your possession relating to espionage, sabotage, or subversive activities to the FBI...Avoid reporting idle rumors and malicious gossip. Do not circulate rumors about subversive activities or draw conclusions from information coming to your attention. The data you possess may be incomplete or only partially accurate and by drawing conclusions or circulating rumors you can cause grave injustices to innocent persons. Hysteria, witch hunts, and vigilante activities weaken our security. It is just as important to protect the innocent as it is to identify our enemies. Refrain from making private investigations. Report the information you have to the FBI and the leave the checking of data to trained investigators..." [Internal Security, Statement by J. Edgar Hoover, April 17, 1962]

Number of "Communists" and "Communist Sympathizers" Within The United States

During his anti-Communist career, Robert Welch (and the JBS) frequently made bold assertions containing numerical statements or percentages about Communist “influence and control” within agencies, organizations, or the U.S. as a whole – but Welch routinely inflated the numbers provided by his original sources of information OR, more commonly, the numbers he used were just abstract inventions with no coherent meaning other than to illustrate his grim view of our internal security status.

It is often difficult to take comments made by Robert Welch and/or the JBS seriously because of the frequent manifest internal illogic revealed in their thought processes. For example:

1958:

The first *American Opinion* (AO) magazine “Scoreboard” issue (July-August 1958) is self-described as “a tabulation... undertaken to estimate the present degree of Communist influence or control over the economic and political affairs of almost all of the nations of the world...The total extent of Communist control or influence over any country, however, is due to the impact of all Communist pressures, direct and indirect, visible and undercover, working together.”

AO claimed that it used “conservative” appraisals as of June 1, 1958. The United States’ score at that time was only 20-40%. But in 1958, according to Robert Welch, “a dedicated conscious agent of the Communist conspiracy” was in the Presidency, and Communist “tools” or “dupes” headed major government Departments such as Allen Dulles (CIA), Neil McElroy (Defense Department) and John Foster Dulles (State Department) and Earl Warren (U.S. Supreme Court Chief Justice).

1960:

In private remarks to the first meeting of his JBS National Council on January 9, 1960, at the Union League Club in Chicago, Welch made these observations about the gravity of our situation:

“From a careful and realistic study of the mountainous pile of evidence that is there for all to see, certain terrifying conclusions are objectively inescapable. Among them are:

- (1) The Communists are winning their large victories, as they always have, through the cumulative effect of small gains;
- (2) They make these gains chiefly through the conniving assistance of many of the very diplomats and officials who are supposed to be opposing them;
- (3) Communist influences are now in almost complete working control of our government;
- (4) And hence, the United States Government is today, as it has been for many years, the most important and powerful single force promoting the world-wide Communist advance.”

[A Confidential Report To Members Of The Council of The John Birch Society – minutes of 1/9/60 meeting held at Union League Club in Chicago IL, page 1-2; minutes signed by Robert Welch.]

Furthermore, according to Robert Welch:

"Today, gentlemen, I can assure you, without the slightest doubt in my own mind that the takeover at the top is, for all practical purposes, virtually complete. Whether you like it or not, or whether you believe it or not, our Federal Government is already, literally in the hands of the Communists." [Ibid, page 2]

"In our two states with the largest population, New York and California...already the two present Governors are almost certainly actual Communists...Our Congress now contains a number of men like Adam Clayton Powell of New York and Charles Porter of Oregon, who are certainly actual Communists, and plenty more who are sympathetic to Communist purposes for either ideological or opportunistic reasons." [Ibid, page 7]

[Note: the reference to Governors refers to Edmund G. Brown of California and Nelson Rockefeller of New York.]

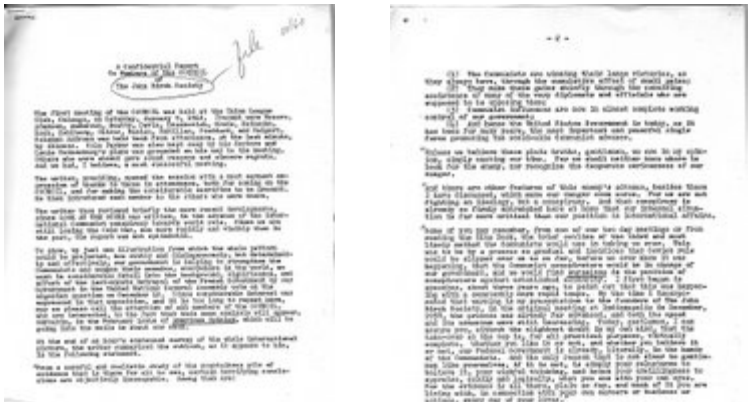
"In the Senate, there are men like Stephen Young of Ohio, and Wayne Morse of Oregon, McNamara of Michigan, and Clifford Case of New Jersey and Hubert Humphrey of Minnesota and Estes Kefauver of Tennessee and John F. Kennedy of Massachusetts, whom it is utter folly to think of as just liberals. Every one of those men is either an actual Communist or so completely a Communist sympathizer or agent that it makes no practical difference..." [Ibid, page 8]

"Our Supreme Court, dominated by Earl Warren and Felix Frankfurter and Hugo Black, is so visibly pro-Communist that no argument is even needed...All our federal courts below that level...are in many cases just as bad." [Ibid, page 8]

"Our State Department is loaded with Communists from top to bottom, to the extent that our roll call of Ambassadors almost sounds like a list somebody has put together to start a Communist front." ... [Ibid, page 8]

"It is estimated from many reliable sources that from 70% to 90% of the responsible personnel in the Department of Health, Education, and Welfare are Communists. Our Central Intelligence Agency under Allen Dulles is nothing more or less than an agency to promote Communism throughout the world...Almost all the other Departments are loaded with Communists and Communist sympathizers. And this generalization most specifically does include our whole Defense Department." [Ibid, page 8]

See pages 1-2, 7-8 and signature by Welch on page 11 below





The AO "Scoreboard" issue for 1960 reflected a U.S. "score" of 40-60%. If one uses the mid-way 50% score, then presumably Communists were successful only half the time in exerting their "influence or control over the economic and political affairs" of the U.S. despite Welch's claims of pervasive Communist penetration into all areas of our government---including multiple cabinet agencies---as Welch described it to his National Council in January 1960.

More amazingly, in April 1961, Welch said that President John F. Kennedy was "less a captive of Communist influences" than former President Eisenhower, but nevertheless the 1961 AO Scoreboard issue score increased to 50-70%! [Washington DC Evening Star, 4/14/61, pA14]

Then there is the matter of how Welch defined and applied the terms he used to characterize internal security matters.

April 1961:

During a nationwide speaking tour which began at the Shrine Auditorium in Los Angeles on April 11, 1961 Welch stated that "a comparatively few thousand Communists, concentrated in key departments and agencies of our Government ..have done a terrific job of determining both the policies and the actions of those agencies and departments and hence indirectly of our whole government." [my emphasis in bold type -- Robert Welch, *Through All The Days To Be*, reprinted in *The New Americanism And Other Speeches and Essays* by Robert Welch, Western Islands Publishers, 1966, page 84.]

Furthermore, "ever since 1945 or 1946 at best, and perhaps from an earlier date, our government has been the most powerful single force supporting the steady worldwide Communist advance---while always pretending, of course, to oppose that advance." ... [Ibid, page 85.]

By contrast, according to the FBI Security Index report dated April 24, 1961, there were only 24 known or suspected Communist Party members or sympathizers working in the entire U.S. Government as of April 14, 1961! [HQ 100-358086, #2900, 4/24/61.]

July 1961:

According to Robert Welch:

"...we believe that there are not more than 300,000 to 500,000 Communists in our country (or about ¼ of 1% of our

population) and not more than a million allies, dupes, and sympathizers whom they can count on for any conscious support..." [*JBS Bulletin*, July 1961, page 14]

Thus, in total, Welch thought there were about 1.3 to 1.5 million Communists, Communist dupes, Communist sympathizers and Communist allies in the United States as of July 1961.

By contrast, the actual number of CP members in the United States according to the FBI was **5262** -- i.e. nothing remotely close to Welch's perception of 300,000 to 500,000! [See FBI New York field file 100-80638, serial #1882, which is a 6/30/61 FBI Chart of CPUSA Membership, by state, by FBI field divisions and by CPUSA Districts. The first page of that summary is copied below].

[illegible]

The 1960 annual Inspection Report of the Bureau's Domestic Intelligence Division reported the following data about the CPUSA:

"Security informant coverage increased to 1507 (1439 as of 3/1/59). Live informants in Communist Party increased from 412 last inspection to 433 or 7.86% of estimated Party membership (5531)." [HQ 67-149000-161X2X1; 11/30/60 memo regarding Domestic Intelligence Division Inspection Report, by J.F. Malone to Mr. Mohr, page 4]

More significantly, the FBI's Security Index was designed to track all persons considered actually or potentially dangerous to U.S. internal security. It included known and suspected Communist Party members plus Communist sympathizers, leaders in Communist fronts, and anyone whom the Bureau considered a potential security risk.

At the time Welch made his statement in July 1961, the FBI's July 1961 Security Index report listed a total of 11,833 persons of which 9899 were in the "Communist" category--which included known or suspected Party members or sympathizers. Thus, while Welch perceived more than a million Communist operatives or sympathizers, the FBI concluded that only 9899 Americans were a potential security concern. [HQ 100-358086, #2939].

According to the FBI:

“With the United States and the Soviet Union allied against Germany in World War II, the Party’s membership soared to its zenith in 1944. Since then, except for a brief upsurge in 1946-1947, the Communist Party’s membership has declined steadily until by the end of 1954 its national membership was less than that of 20 years ago.” [FBI monograph, “*Membership of the Communist Party USA, 1919-1954*”, May 1955, page iii].

The following chart taken from the above-referenced monograph reflects the actual Communist Party membership from 1919-1954:

Fig. 1 - MEMBERSHIP OF THE COMMUNIST PARTY IN THE UNITED STATES

1920-1958

1920*	10,000	1947	45,000
1921	8,000	1948	50,000
1922	10,000	1949	70,000
1923	15,000	1950	75,000
1924	10,000	1951	50,000
1925	15,000	1952	50,000
1926	20,000	1953	55,000
1927	25,000	1954	60,000
1928	30,000	1955	65,000
1929	35,000	1956	70,000
1930	40,000	1957	75,000
1931	45,000	1958	80,000
1932	50,000	1959	85,000
1933	55,000	1960	90,000
1934	60,000	1961	95,000
1935	65,000	1962	100,000
1936	70,000	1963	105,000
1937	75,000	1964	110,000
1938	80,000	1965	115,000
1939	85,000	1966	120,000
1940	90,000	1967	125,000
1941	95,000	1968	130,000
1942	100,000	1969	135,000
1943	105,000	1970	140,000
1944	110,000	1971	145,000
1945	115,000	1972	150,000
1946	120,000	1973	155,000
1947	125,000	1974	160,000
1948	130,000	1975	165,000
1949	135,000	1976	170,000
1950	140,000	1977	175,000
1951	145,000	1978	180,000
1952	150,000	1979	185,000
1953	155,000	1980	190,000
1954	160,000	1981	195,000
1955	165,000	1982	200,000
1956	170,000	1983	205,000
1957	175,000	1984	210,000
1958	180,000	1985	215,000
1959	185,000	1986	220,000
1960	190,000	1987	225,000
1961	195,000	1988	230,000
1962	200,000	1989	235,000
1963	205,000	1990	240,000
1964	210,000	1991	245,000
1965	215,000	1992	250,000
1966	220,000	1993	255,000
1967	225,000	1994	260,000
1968	230,000	1995	265,000
1969	235,000	1996	270,000
1970	240,000	1997	275,000
1971	245,000	1998	280,000
1972	250,000	1999	285,000
1973	255,000	2000	290,000
1974	260,000	2001	295,000
1975	265,000	2002	300,000
1976	270,000	2003	305,000
1977	275,000	2004	310,000
1978	280,000	2005	315,000
1979	285,000	2006	320,000
1980	290,000	2007	325,000
1981	295,000	2008	330,000
1982	300,000	2009	335,000
1983	305,000	2010	340,000
1984	310,000	2011	345,000
1985	315,000	2012	350,000
1986	320,000	2013	355,000
1987	325,000	2014	360,000
1988	330,000	2015	365,000
1989	335,000	2016	370,000
1990	340,000	2017	375,000
1991	345,000	2018	380,000
1992	350,000	2019	385,000
1993	355,000	2020	390,000
1994	360,000	2021	395,000
1995	365,000	2022	400,000
1996	370,000	2023	405,000
1997	375,000	2024	410,000
1998	380,000	2025	415,000
1999	385,000	2026	420,000
2000	390,000	2027	425,000
2001	395,000	2028	430,000
2002	400,000	2029	435,000
2003	405,000	2030	440,000
2004	410,000	2031	445,000
2005	415,000	2032	450,000
2006	420,000	2033	455,000
2007	425,000	2034	460,000
2008	430,000	2035	465,000
2009	435,000	2036	470,000
2010	440,000	2037	475,000
2011	445,000	2038	480,000
2012	450,000	2039	485,000
2013	455,000	2040	490,000
2014	460,000	2041	495,000
2015	465,000	2042	500,000
2016	470,000	2043	505,000
2017	475,000	2044	510,000
2018	480,000	2045	515,000
2019	485,000	2046	520,000
2020	490,000	2047	525,000
2021	495,000	2048	530,000
2022	500,000	2049	535,000
2023	505,000	2050	540,000
2024	510,000	2051	545,000
2025	515,000	2052	550,000
2026	520,000	2053	555,000
2027	525,000	2054	560,000
2028	530,000	2055	565,000
2029	535,000	2056	570,000
2030	540,000	2057	575,000
2031	545,000	2058	580,000
2032	550,000	2059	585,000
2033	555,000	2060	590,000
2034	560,000	2061	595,000
2035	565,000	2062	600,000
2036	570,000	2063	605,000
2037	575,000	2064	610,000
2038	580,000	2065	615,000
2039	585,000	2066	620,000
2040	590,000	2067	625,000
2041	595,000	2068	630,000
2042	600,000	2069	635,000
2043	605,000	2070	640,000
2044	610,000	2071	645,000
2045	615,000	2072	650,000
2046	620,000	2073	655,000
2047	625,000	2074	660,000
2048	630,000	2075	665,000
2049	635,000	2076	670,000
2050	640,000	2077	675,000
2051	645,000	2078	680,000
2052	650,000	2079	685,000
2053	655,000	2080	690,000
2054	660,000	2081	695,000
2055	665,000	2082	700,000
2056	670,000	2083	705,000
2057	675,000	2084	710,000
2058	680,000	2085	715,000
2059	685,000	2086	720,000
2060	690,000	2087	725,000
2061	695,000	2088	730,000
2062	700,000	2089	735,000
2063	705,000	2090	740,000
2064	710,000	2091	745,000
2065	715,000	2092	750,000
2066	720,000	2093	755,000
2067	725,000	2094	760,000
2068	730,000	2095	765,000
2069	735,000	2096	770,000
2070	740,000	2097	775,000
2071	745,000	2098	780,000
2072	750,000	2099	785,000
2073	755,000	2100	790,000
2074	760,000	2101	795,000
2075	765,000	2102	800,000
2076	770,000	2103	805,000
2077	775,000	2104	810,000
2078	780,000	2105	815,000
2079	785,000	2106	820,000
2080	790,000	2107	825,000
2081	795,000	2108	830,000
2082	800,000	2109	835,000
2083	805,000	2110	840,000
2084	810,000	2111	845,000
2085	815,000	2112	850,000
2086	820,000	2113	855,000
2087	825,000	2114	860,000
2088	830,000	2115	865,000
2089	835,000	2116	870,000
2090	840,000	2117	875,000
2091	845,000	2118	880,000
2092	850,000	2119	885,000
2093	855,000	2120	890,000
2094	860,000	2121	895,000
2095	865,000	2122	900,000
2096	870,000	2123	905,000
2097	875,000	2124	910,000
2098	880,000	2125	915,000
2099	885,000	2126	920,000
2100	890,000	2127	925,000
2101	895,000	2128	930,000
2102	900,000	2129	935,000
2103	905,000	2130	940,000
2104	910,000	2131	945,000
2105	915,000	2132	950,000
2106	920,000	2133	955,000
2107	925,000	2134	960,000
2108	930,000	2135	965,000
2109	935,000	2136	970,000
2110	940,000	2137	975,000
2111	945,000	2138	980,000
2112	950,000	2139	985,000
2113	955,000	2140	990,000
2114	960,000	2141	995,000
2115	965,000	2142	1,000,000
2116	970,000	2143	1,005,000
2117	975,000	2144	1,010,000
2118	980,000	2145	1,015,000
2119	985,000	2146	1,020,000
2120	990,000	2147	1,025,000
2121	995,000	2148	1,030,000
2122	1,000,000	2149	1,035,000
2123	1,005,000	2150	1,040,000
2124	1,010,000	2151	1,045,000
2125	1,015,000	2152	1,050,000
2126	1,020,000	2153	1,055,000
2127	1,025,000	2154	1,060,000
2128	1,030,000	2155	1,065,000
2129	1,035,000	2156	1,070,000
2130	1,040,000	2157	1,075,000
2131	1,045,000	2158	1,080,000
2132	1,050,000	2159	1,085,000
2133	1,055,000	2160	1,090,000
2134	1,060,000	2161	1,095,000
2135	1,065,000	2162	1,100,000
2136	1,070,000	2163	1,105,000
2137	1,075,000	2164	1,110,000
2138	1,080,000	2165	1,115,000
2139	1,085,000	2166	1,120,000
2140	1,090,000	2167	1,125,000
2141	1,095,000	2168	1,130,000
2142	1,100,000	2169	1,135,000
2143	1,105,000	2170	1,140,000
2144	1,110,000	2171	1,145,000
2145	1,115,000	2172	1,150,000
2146	1,120,000	2173	1,155,000
2147	1,125,000	2174	1,160,000
2148	1,130,000	2175	1,165,000
2149	1,135,000	2176	1,170,000
2150	1,140,000	2177	1,175,000
2151	1,145,000	2178	1,180,000
2152	1,150,000	2179	1,185,000
2153	1,155,000	2180	1,190,000
2154	1,160,000	2181	1,195,000
2155	1,165,000	2182	1,200,000
2156	1,170,000	2183	1,205,000
2157	1,175,000	2184	1,210,000
2158	1,180,000	2185	1,215,000
2159	1,185,000	2186	1,220,000
2160	1,190,000	2187	1,225,000
2161	1,195,000	2188	1,230,000
2162	1,200,000	2189	1,235,000
2163	1,205,000	2190	1,240,000
2164	1,210,000	2191	1,245,000
2165	1,215,000	2192	1,250,000
2166	1,220,000	2193	1,255,000
2167	1,225,000	2194	1,260,000
2168	1,230,000	2195	1,265,000
2169	1,235,000	2196	1,270,000
2170	1,240,000	2197	1,275,000
2171	1,245,000	2198	1,280,000

Here then is a summary of January Security Index statistics for the “Communist” category in the period from 1956 thru 1962 as reflected in the FBI Security Index file [HQ 100-358086]

Date	Number of Communists and Sympathizers on SI	Fed Gov employees on SI (includes non-communists)
01/11/56	11,396	2
01/15/57	11,456	4
01/13/58	11,569	8
01/12/59	11,157	16
01/14/60	10,765	19
01/13/61	10,148	19
01/05/62	9,715	22

December 1961:

Assistant Attorney General J. Walter Yeagley (head of Internal Security Division of the U.S. Justice Dept.) wrote a letter to Robert Welch concerning Welch’s 11/20/61 speech in Austin TX wherein he claimed that there were “[a few thousand Communists concentrated in key departments](#)” of the U.S. Government.

Yeagley observed:

“The charges you make are not to my knowledge supported by the material in the investigative files of government employees...(and) it is my responsibility to prosecute any Communist who may have falsely denied in government forms his membership in the Communist Party; and now under the Internal Security Act to prosecute any persons occupying a government position whom we can prove in court by legally admissible evidence to be a Communist Party member. Will you please turn over to the FBI at once the facts in your possession and the sources thereof which may establish that certain government employees are members of the Communist Party. It is the utmost importance that such data as you indicate you possess be made available for the use of the government at once.” [HQ 62-104401, #1598, 12/8/61 Yeagley letter to Robert Welch.]

In August 1962 J. Edgar Hoover sent a memo to the Deputy Attorney General which reported that “[Welch has not communicated with this Bureau to supply the information requested by Assistant Attorney General Yeagley’s letter.](#)” [HQ 62-104401, #1746, 8/29/62 Hoover to Deputy Attorney General.]

Chapter 3

Communist Infiltration of Clergy and Religious Organizations

Numerous controversies erupted around the country on this topic and many of them were created by JBS members or supporters.

One of the first incidents was the January 4, 1960 release of the "*Air Reserve Training Manual*" which was issued by the Continental Air Command at Lackland Air Force Base in Texas. It was designed to be used in courses for Air Force Reserve noncommissioned officers assigned to the Continental Air Command. Approximately 3300 copies were distributed.

On February 17, 1960, Mr. James A. Wine, Associate General Secretary of the National Council of the Churches of Christ in the USA, released a statement to the press protesting that section of the manual which discussed Communist infiltration of churches because of its derogatory references to the NCCC.

The manual's section entitled "*Communism in Religion*" was written by Homer H. Hyde. Mr. Hyde subsequently acknowledged that he used information supplied to him by Billy James Hargis (Christian Crusade), and Myers Lowman (Circuit Riders, Inc) as the basis for his comments.

The themes and conclusions that Hyde used were identical to those contained in literature published by Church League of America (Edgar C. Bundy), *American Mercury* magazine (J.B. Matthews), Carl McIntire (Twentieth Century Reformation Hour), the John Birch Society (Robert Welch), and the aforementioned Billy James Hargis and Myers Lowman.

See Edgar Bundy report at: <http://ernie1241.googlepages.com/bundy-1>

The manual stated, among other things, that Communists had successfully infiltrated our churches, and that 30 of the 95 scholars associated with the *Revised Standard Version of the Bible* were affiliated with Communist fronts and activities.

ENTER THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY...

In April 1960, Robert Welch told his members that...

"...the largest single group supporting the Communist apparatus in the United States is composed of members of the Protestant clergy" --and—

"...there are, as the leading students of the subject all agree -- more than seven thousand Protestant clergymen actively helping the Communists to make dangerous propaganda and pressure weapons out of the National Council of Churches and some other church organizations. Now is the time to bring this whole issue into the open, in every way possible; and to start a determined drive to eliminate Communist influences from control over Christian churches." [*John Birch Society Bulletin*, April 1960, pages 18-19].

During a nationwide speaking tour which began at the Shrine Auditorium in Los Angeles on April 11, 1961 Mr. Welch expanded upon his comments. The nationwide tour included the following cities: 4/13/61, Santa Barbara CA; 4/14/61 Phoenix AZ; 4/15/61 Amarillo TX; 4/18/61 Houston TX; 6/24/61 Minneapolis MN; 10/11/61 Oakland PA, and 10/12/61 in Indianapolis IN.

During his speech Welch stated that with respect to Protestant ministers, "the estimates I have seen which appeared most trustworthy indicate that about 7000 of them could fairly be called Comsymps...A Comsymp is a man who is either a Communist or a sympathizer with Communist purposes. So the number of Comsymps in the whole Protestant

ministry would thus come out as about three percent.” [Robert Welch, *Through All The Days To Be*, reprinted in *The New Americanism And Other Speeches and Essays* by Robert Welch, Western Islands Publishers, 1966, page 79.]

Another trigger in this controversy was the publication of several articles authored by Louis Cassels, a Senior Editor and Religion columnist for United Press International.

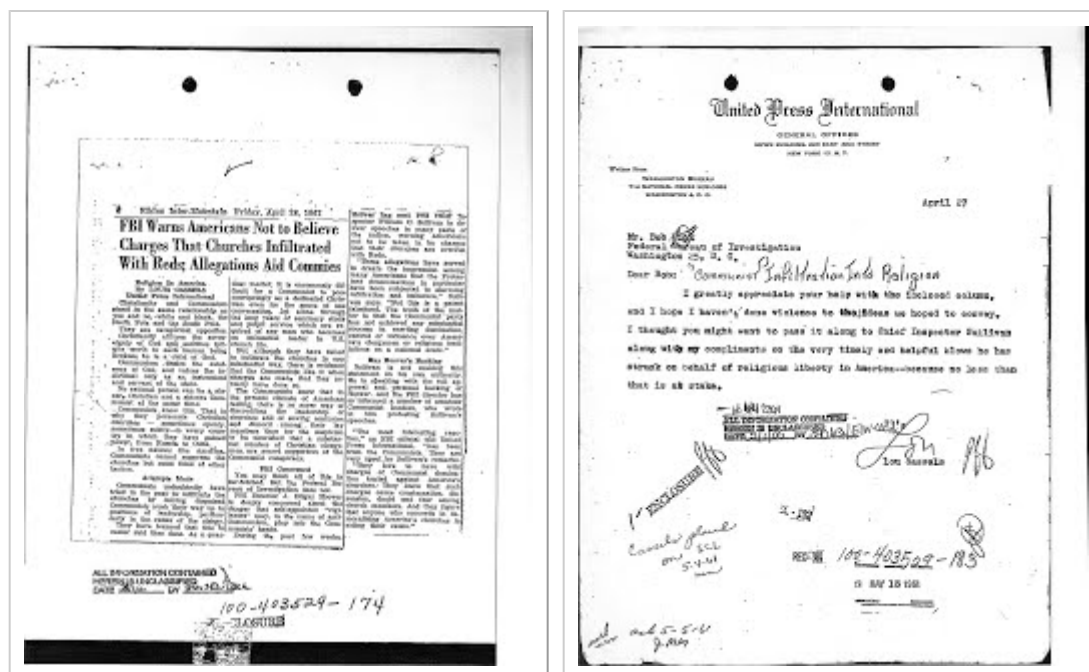
In April 1961, Mr. Cassels wrote an article for his weekly newspaper column, *Religion in America*, which provoked an enormous outcry from the extreme right. The Cassels column summarized speeches made around the country during the Spring of 1961 by FBI Chief Inspector William C. Sullivan.

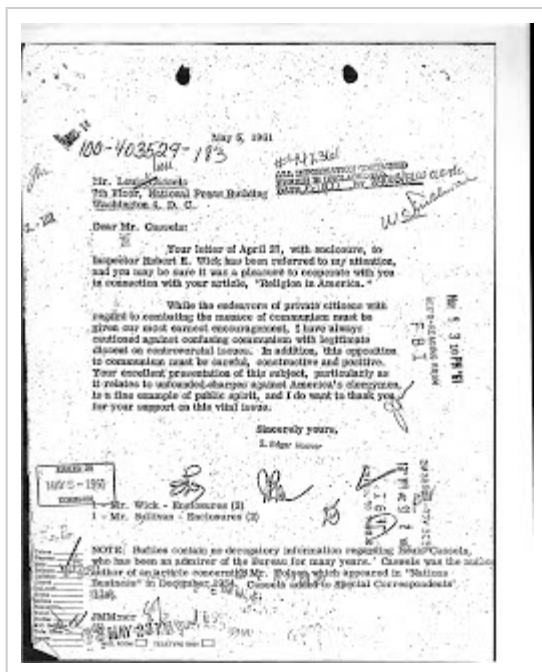
In those speeches, Sullivan denied that there had been significant Communist penetration of U.S. clergy or churches. Subsequently, Mr. Cassels wrote two magazine articles which further aggravated the controversy. (“*What About Communism In Our Churches?*”, *The Episcopalian*, July 1961 –and– “*The Rightist Crisis In Our Churches*”, *Look* magazine, April 24, 1962.]

Mr. Cassels sent a copy of his April 28, 1961 column to his FBI contact (Inspector Robert E. Wick) and then Hoover replied to Cassels:

“...you may be sure that it was a pleasure to cooperate with you in connection with your article...While the endeavors of private citizens with regard to combating the menace of communism must be given our most earnest encouragement, I have always cautioned against confusing communism with legitimate dissent on controversial issues. In addition, this opposition to communism must be careful, constructive and positive. Your excellent presentation of this subject particularly as it relates to unfounded charges against America's clergymen, is a fine example of public spirit, and I do want to thank you for your support on this vital issue. Sincerely yours, J. Edgar Hoover.” [HQ 100-403529-183, 5/5/61 J. Edgar Hoover letter to Louis Cassels].

Below are scanned copies of the April 1961 column by Cassels, the letter by Cassels to FBI Inspector Wick, and the complimentary letter from J. Edgar Hoover to Cassels about his column:





As newspapers across the country published the Cassels column, the Bureau was inundated with angry letters, phone calls, and telegrams from persons and organizations that were stunned by the remarks attributed to FBI Chief Inspector William Sullivan.

There were incredulous letters from ordinary citizens and furious objections by organizations such as Church League of America (Edgar C. Bundy) and Twentieth Century Reformation Hour (Carl McIntire) and Circuit Riders, Inc. (Myers G. Lowman)---all of whom demanded that J. Edgar Hoover set the record straight.

Circuit Riders was an organization that specialized in publishing "*compilations*" of alleged subversive affiliations of various groups of clergymen under such titles as: "*A Compilation of Public Records on 2109 Methodist Ministers*" and "*658 Clergymen and Laymen Connected With The National Council of Churches*" and "*42% of the Unitarian Clergy and 450 Rabbis.*"

In March 1961 the Bureau received a phone call from a representative of Circuit Riders, who demanded to know if Hoover had approved Sullivan's remarks. A Bureau memo summarizes the encounter:

"Per DeLoach to Mohr memo dated 3-3-61, Myers Lowman of Circuit Riders called SOG [Seat of Government-FBI HQ] on that day and made an emotional objection to a speech previously given by Inspector William C. Sullivan. Lowman was informed that Mr. Sullivan was speaking with the full experience and background of facts concerning matters known to the Bureau and Mr. Sullivan was in no manner incorrect in any statements made." [HQ 62-104401-1231, 3/3/61].

A 1964 Bureau memo reveals their evaluation of Myers Lowman:

"Lowman and his organization are well known to us. He is an extremist and you will recall that in March 1961, he telephoned your (Mr. DeLoach's) office to complain that Assistant Director Sullivan's approach to communism was a serious deterrent to those trying to expose this menace. The Director noted at that time that Lowman '*is a fanatic and therefore irresponsible*'. According to our files as of June 1962, the IRS was investigating him for not having filed

income tax returns for a period of nine years. SAC Mason recently advised us that this matter is still not adjudicated. SAC Mason advised that Lowman contacts him approximately once a year and he has noted that Lowman has been becoming visibly more nervous and unstable, and appears to be on the verge of a nervous breakdown." [HQ 62-104576, #unrecorded; 2/17/64 memo from M.A. Jones to DeLoach in Edgar Bundy/Church League of America file].

As might be expected, numerous Birchers wrote to Hoover to demand that he repudiate both Cassels and William Sullivan. One Escondido CA Bircher asked Hoover why Sullivan was permitted to make such speeches because it diminished the idea of any significant Communist infiltration into our clergy and religious institutions and contradicted Hoover's own comments on the matter. Hoover replied:

"In connection with the matter you mentioned, representatives of the FBI who are privileged to speak before various groups throughout the country do so with my full knowledge and approval. I can assure you that their remarks on communism do not repudiate in any way statements I have made...Assistant Director William C. Sullivan in his discussion of communism dealt with this subject accurately and objectively." [HQ 62-104401, #1348, 6/28/61 JBS member to Hoover and 7/5/61 Hoover reply.]

Another major player in this controversy was the American Council of Christian Laymen (ACCL), headed by Verne P. Kaub. Kaub authored one of the most widely distributed and long-lived pamphlets used by the extreme right to "document" their statements about the alleged "Communist affiliations" of many prominent clergymen.

The first edition in October 1949 was entitled, "*How Red is the Federal Council of Churches?*" but the title was later revised to reflect the subsequent merger and name-change of the FCC to: "*How Red Is The National Council of Churches?*"

Many thousands of these pamphlets were sold to organizations all across the country and decades afterward, critics of the National Council frequently would cite this pamphlet as their source of information.

The preface of "*How Red...*" describes its content as "These are just a few of the hundreds of present and past officers, leaders and prominent members of the Federal/National Council who have aided and abetted God-hating, un-American organizations."

One of the prominent religious leaders listed by ACCL was Ralph W. Sockman. In 1952 Kaub wrote to J. Edgar Hoover to inquire whether or not Hoover had praised Sockman during a radio interview. One Bureau memo on the matter states that:

"On 3-11-52, the Director advised Kaub that Ralph Sockman had spoken before the FBI National Academy and he would not have invited him to make such an address unless he thought Sockman to be a loyal citizen." [HQ 62-100432-17, 9/11/53].

A 1953 FBI memo refers to the...

"running feud between the ACCL headed by Kaub and the Federal Council of Churches. The Bureau has received numerous inquiries from individuals who have read '*How Red Is the Federal Council of Churches?*' which brochure was issued by the ACCL. This brochure concerns itself solely with attacking the Federal Council of Churches...In this regard, the Bureau has not investigated the Federal Council of Churches and contact with informants and sources

in New York fail to reveal that this council is in any way subversive.” [HQ 62-100432-1, 9/11/53].

In an October 19, 1958 letter to Patrick F. Scanlan, Managing Editor of *The Brooklyn Tablet*, Kaub gives his evaluation of J. Edgar Hoover's 1958 book, *Masters of Deceit*. According to Kaub, Hoover's book...

“exemplifies one of the best subversive tricks, namely present a great mass of anti-subversive material to convince the reader that the book is 100% American but insert one section or chapter of poison. In this case, the poison, or deceit, is the complete whitewashing of the vicious Zionist organizations including American Jewish Committee, B’nai B’rith and its subsidiary smear bund, Anti-Defamation League. You, of course, know that these organizations support all sorts of Communist devised subversion by way of developing and leading to their own master-plot for world domination and destruction of Christian civilization.”

In 1959 Kaub contacted both Billy James Hargis and Robert Welch to propose that the ACCL be “*taken over*” and operated by one of them.

IMPACT OF SULLIVAN'S 1961-1962 SPEECHES AROUND THE COUNTRY

To give the reader a sense of the tremendous impact of the Sullivan speeches, below is an excerpt from one letter sent to J. Edgar Hoover. This Birch Society member asserted that Sullivan made it seem that...

“anyone who alleged that many communists have infiltrated the clergy, was uninformed and very much an alarmist. You and I, I hope, know this is not true...All America owes you a debt we can never repay – but I trust that you will not hesitate to support the patriots who are dedicated and conscientiously trying to roll back the Socialistic Communistic tide which threatens to engulf this nation. Regardless of the risk, you must not break faith, but if the anti-communist John Birch Society goes the way that McCarthyism has gone I will always feel that yours was the key testimony which dealt us our most destructive blow.” [HQ 62-104401-1281, 4/30/61].

Hoover replied as follows:

“The communists have tried to infiltrate every part of our society, and I agree with you wholeheartedly that patriotic Americans must continue to take a firm stand against communism...But this opposition to communism must be careful, constructive and positive, and it must always be kept within the due process of law. In reference to Mr. Cassels' article, Chief Inspector William C. Sullivan in his discussion of communism dealt with this subject with all possible objectivity, candor and accuracy.” [Ibid].

OCTOBER 1961 SULLIVAN SPEECH AT HIGHLAND PARK METHODIST CHURCH

In the Fall of 1961, Chief Inspector Sullivan prepared a comprehensive overview of the subject of Communist infiltration of religion which he proposed to give as a speech at Highland Park Methodist Church in Dallas Texas---reportedly the largest Methodist Church in the world.

By cover memo dated October 5, 1961, Sullivan circulated the proposed text of his speech to top Bureau officials, including J. Edgar Hoover, seeking authorization to give the speech on October 19th. Hoover initialed the memo and wrote “OK”.

Here, then, are some major excerpts from Sullivan's remarks plus supplementary material. Notice how carefully

Sullivan crafted his comments to specifically address assertions in extreme right literature and speeches. (The numbers in parentheses refer to footnotes in the printed version of the speech).

"Protestants in particular have been singled out by critics, mainly within their own ranks, as being especially susceptible to communist appeals and tactics. It has been charged that the most sizable single body giving support to the American communist movement is comprised of Protestant clergymen (3). Additionally, it has been said that, of all the Protestant denominations, Methodists have been the most extensively infiltrated by communists. (4)"

Footnote #3 refers to a July 1953 article by J.B. Matthews in *American Mercury* magazine which was the basis for Robert Welch's subsequent numerical claim of "more than 7000 Protestant clergymen"

However, Robert Welch misrepresented what Matthews said.

According to Matthews, the 7000 figure he used in the year 1953 reflected the total number of clergymen "during the last 17 years" whom he believed were involved as fellow-travelers, unwitting dupes, party-line adherents, and outright Party members and espionage agents.

Matthews did not attempt to establish how many individuals belonged in each of the 5 categories that he specified nor did he estimate the number of clergymen from his aggregate 7000 total that remained active in 1953 when he wrote his article.

As will shortly become apparent, the 17-year time frame suggested by Matthews refers to the apogee of Communist activity within the U.S. – and, consequently, had no significance for events or circumstances in later decades.

The Bureau's analysis of the Matthews article concluded:

"In arrangement, handling of names, selection of facts, and in its implications, the article is not at all fair to the Protestant clergy of this country" and it characterized Matthew's charges as "more in the nature of sensational journalism than serious reporting of the facts." [HQ 100-5821-22, 7/29/53]

By way of illustrating the imprecision of this "numbers game", ex-Communist (and FBI informant) Joseph Zack Kornfeder testified before the House Committee on Un-American Activities in July 1953, that "**up to 600**" Communists had infiltrated the clergy in America. [Tax Fax #31, "*Communist Infiltration In Religion*, published by Kent Courtney, Free Men Speak Inc., and via his newspaper, *The Independent American*, 1961]

Kent Courtney was a JBS member. The Bureau evaluation of Courtney and his publication is contained in the Bureau file captioned "*Communism and Religion*":

"The pamphlet, '*Communist Infiltration in Religion*' is a publication disseminated by '*The Independent American*', New Orleans, Louisiana, whose publisher Kent Courtney, has in the past advocated the impeachment of Chief Justice Earl Warren. His paper indicates he is a rabble rouser and a hate monger, and we have refused to furnish publications disseminated by this Bureau to him." [HQ 100-403529, #237, notation on 8/11/61 file copy of J. Edgar Hoover reply to inquiry from Leonia, New Jersey]

It is revealing that, in 1960, Welch said the number had increased to "more than 7000". Apparently, in the Welch scheme of things, no clergymen in 24 years had died, retired, or were otherwise no longer interested or able to assist

the “*communists*”! Moreover, Welch made no distinctions, as even J.B. Matthews had done, between unwitting dupes vs. the other categories mentioned by Matthews.

The next 17 pages of Sullivan's speech discuss specific details about communist attempts to infiltrate religion. He made a distinction that seems lost on the adherents of the extreme right:

Over the years, some well-meaning, intelligent, and patriotic Americans of distinction—including clergymen—have been induced to give their names, their prestige, and often their talents to communist fronts or causes without apparently being aware of their true nature or purpose. These men and women were mostly motivated by a genuine and idealistic desire to further what they thought or had been led to believe were worthwhile and laudable social objectives and programs. These individuals were frequently too busy or too unsuspecting, or both, to investigate the nature and backing of the organization with which they had identified themselves. Even though in some cases they have known or suspected that communists were involved, they were too unfamiliar with communist practices to realize that communists were not interested in the cause itself, but only in the way it could be twisted and used to advance communist aims and goals.” [William C. Sullivan, *Communism and Religion in The United States*, Highland Park Methodist Church, Dallas, Texas, October 19, 1961, page 3.]

In a section of his speech entitled “*Extent of Communist Infiltration of Clergy*” Sullivan comes to grips with the core allegations made by the extreme right:

“We have seen why and how communists have made continuous and persistent efforts over the years to penetrate American churches and to exploit American clergymen. But to stop here would result in conveying a totally erroneous impression as to the extent of communist infiltration of the clergy. To give an objective appraisal, it is essential to point out that the apogee of communist activity, penetration, and influence among clergymen and churches in the United States coincides with the zenith of the numerical strength, activity, and influence of the American communist movement generally. This peak was reached in the late 1930's and during and just after World War II. It was in 1944 that the Communist Party USA boasted of a top membership of 80,000 plus an extensive communist front apparatus.”

“Since the late 1940's, communist influence within the churches and among the clergy has waned along with the diminution of the Party's membership, activity, and influence on the American scene. Therefore, it cannot be said that the Communist Party USA has achieved any substantial success in exerting domination, control, or influence over America's clergymen or religious bodies and institutions on a national scale. The fact of the matter is that no substantial number of clergymen have been closely identified with the Communist Party over the years.”

“According to estimates, there are 300,000 ordained clergymen in the United States, the great majority of whom are Protestant. When this large figure is compared with the total number of clergymen who have had communist affiliations, joined communist fronts, engaged in communist activities, supported communist causes, signed communist documents, or otherwise---wittingly or unwittingly---aided and abetted the communist movement during the past four decades, the proportion is actually exceedingly small. Moreover, many of the most active, most vocal, and most publicized of these clergymen who have worked so diligently on behalf of communism do not have or never have had their own churches or congregations. Of those who did have, many were removed when their procommunist backgrounds and connections became known.”

“To recapitulate, it can be stated factually and without equivocation that any allegation is false which holds that there

has been and is, on a national scale, an extensive or substantial communist infiltration of the American clergy, in particular the Protestant clergy. This statement applied with equal force to the Methodists as it does to other religious denominations.” [Ibid, pages 18-19].

In January 1961, William Sullivan wrote a review of a recent book entitled *Communism and the Churches* by Ralph Lord Roy. In his review, Sullivan inserted a comment which reveals the FBI’s evaluation of the extent of Communist penetration of our clergy and religious institution:

“Note: In a study prepared by the Bureau in March 1960, 15 clergymen and 18 church workers were listed on the Security Index.” [HQ 100-3-82-320, 1/9/61; also see 100-403539-112].

Since the FBI’s “Security Index” was designed to keep track of those persons it considered dangerous to U.S. security, the total of 33 people listed (not 7000+) should put this matter into proper perspective.

A February 24, 1960 memo discusses the SI listings further:

“A complete review of our SI shows that 13 minister’s names are included in our SI. Six of these men are active in church work while seven are retired or inactive. In addition, the names of 21 church workers are included in our SI. These 21 people are, for the most part, engaged in clerical work for various church groups. None of these individuals appear to wield any substantial influence on the national policies of the church groups of which they are affiliated.” [HQ 100-3-106-306, 2/24/60, Mr. Parsons to Alan Belmont, page 3].

The FBI was not the only agency to receive numerous heated inquiries about the Sullivan speeches. Francis E. Walter, Chairman of the House Committee on Un-American Activities, replied to critics of Sullivan—including Edgar C. Bundy of Church League of America.

In his 3/21/61 letter to Bundy, HCUA Chairman Walter observed that Sullivan was “probably the most knowledgeable of any agent in the Bureau on the subject of Communism”, and in a subsequent August 7, 1961 letter to another Sullivan critic, Walter wrote: “I do not find that our Committee is in disagreement in any way with the statements contained in Sullivan’s speech.” [FBI HQ file 94-4-4644, serial #66].

With respect to extreme right assertions regarding the National Council of Churches of Christ in the USA (NCCC), one must understand something about FBI requirements for commencing an official investigation. Here, then, is the FBI explanation:

“Under our policy we initiate investigation regarding communist infiltration of any church group if the communists have infiltrated the group in sufficient numbers to substantially influence or control the affairs of the group. However, such an investigation may be started by the field only with prior Bureau authority. We have only one such investigation. It involves the First Unitarian Church in Los Angeles, California.” [HQ 100-3-106-306, 2/24/60, Mr. Parsons to Alan Belmont, page 2].

With that policy in mind, the Bureau never conducted an official investigation of the NCCC. Quoted below is the FBI characterization of NCCC:

“The Bureau has never conducted an investigation of the NCCC; however, we have in the past checked with informants and did not develop any indication that communists influence the policies of this organization.” [100-3-106-306, 2/24/60, Mr. Parsons to Alan Belmont, page 6-7]

However, the Bureau did discover Communist-front affiliations of some NCCC officials:

"With respect to the NCCC, it seems obvious from the information in our files that the Communist Party USA is not controlling the policies of this body. However, we do have information that (names deleted) of this group, and four of its national officers have been affiliated with communist-front organizations. We have not conducted investigation on any of these individuals and they have not been converted to membership in the Communist Party USA. Neither has the Communist Party USA been able to place a communist on the staff of the NCCC." [HQ 100-3-106-306, 2/24/60, Mr. Parsons to Alan Belmont, page 16]

Communist Party Use of Clergymen

What, primarily, was the Communist Party USA able to accomplish with respect to infiltrating and influencing our clergy?

According to the FBI...

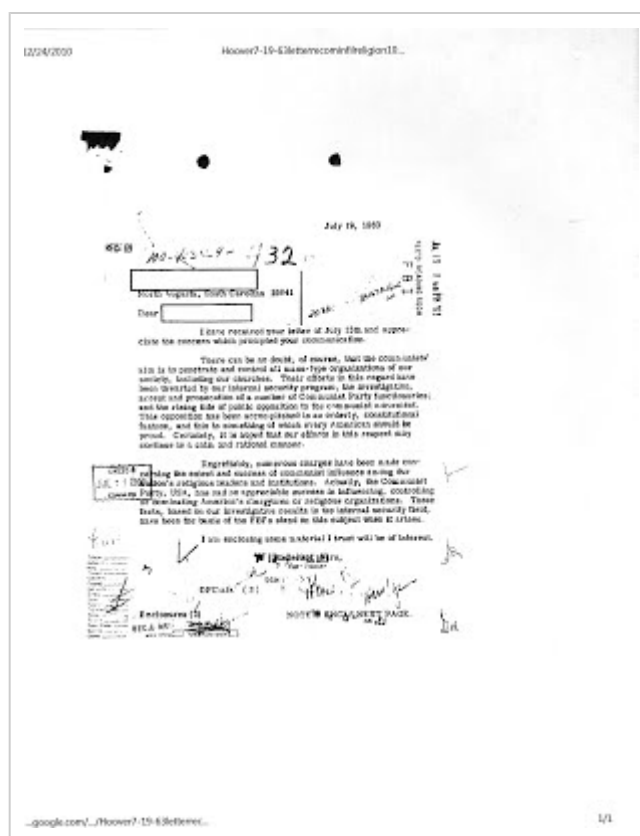
"One of the most successful approaches used by communists in the religious field is its ability to obtain the names of clergymen and prominent church people on various types of petitions aimed at furthering some communist program. The Party carries out this program very subtly and most of the clergymen who sign such petitions are not aware that they are affixing their name to a communist-sponsored paper." [HQ 100-3-106-306, 2/24/60, Mr. Parsons to Alan Belmont, page 9]

"...The Party's greatest success in influencing American clergymen in any way has been its ability to persuade them to sign petitions. This is not so startling considering the fact the petitions are not usually presented as Communist Party petitions. The clergymen are approached on the basis they will be lending their names to a worthy cause such as peace, civil rights or amnesty for some individual serving an alleged unjust jail sentence. While this does not mean that the Communist Party USA is able to control the policies of the church groups, it does reveal they were able, although it may have been through subterfuge, to influence the thinking of a number of clergymen with respect to the communist propaganda involved in the petitions signed." [HQ 100-3-106-306, 2/24/60, Mr. Parsons to Alan Belmont, page 16]

In 1963, J. Edgar Hoover made the following observations about this issue:

"There can be no doubt, of course, that the communists' aim is to penetrate and control all mass-type organizations of our society, including our churches. Their efforts in this regard have been thwarted by our internal security program...Regrettably, numerous charges have been made concerning the extent and success of communist influence among our Nation's religious leaders and institutions. Actually, the Communist Party USA has had no appreciable success in influencing, controlling, or dominating America's clergymen or religious organizations. These facts, based on our investigative results in the internal security field, have been the basis of the FBI's stand on this subject when it arises." [HQ 100-403529-432, July 19, 1963 Hoover letter in response to an inquiry on the subject]

See actual memo here: [Hoover7-19-63letterrecominfilreligion100-403529-432.jpg](#)



Chapter 4:

FBI vs. JBS on Communists in the Department of Health, Education, Welfare

An example of the problem that Hoover described regarding "self-styled experts...without valid credentials" is contained in Bureau memoranda of February 1961 which pertain to a speech and article by JBS National Council member Revilo P. Oliver. Oliver's statements concerned alleged Communist infiltration into the Department of Health, Education and Welfare.

ARTICLE:

In his October 1959 *American Opinion* article Oliver asserted that:

- (1) between 70% and 80% of the responsible officers in the Department of Health, Education and Welfare (DHEW) were "members or accomplices" of the Communist conspiracy,
- (2) some DHEW employees served as Communist couriers, and
- (3) DHEW officials intended to purge employees with anti-Communist tendencies.

SPEECH:

In his March 1959 speech to Illinois DAR, Oliver stated that "fully one-third of the top echelon of Communist conspirators in this country" could be found in DHEW and he cited former FBI Security Informant, Herbert A. Philbrick (of "I Led 3 Lives" fame) as his source of information.

[HQ 62-104401-709, enclosure = "*All America Must Know How Reds Work In Government*", Oliver speech before annual Illinois State Convention of the Daughters of the American Revolution.]

ROBERT WELCH USE OF OLIVER INFO:

At the first meeting of the JBS National Council which was held January 9, 1960 in Chicago at the Union League Club, Robert Welch told National Council members:

"It is estimated from many reliable sources that from 70% to 90% of the responsible personnel in the Department of Health, Education, and Welfare are Communists."

It seems clear that Welch did NOT rely upon "[many reliable sources](#)" but, relied instead, just upon Revilo Oliver. In the March 1965 issue of *American Opinion*, Robert Welch described Oliver as "[an authentic genius of the first water, and quite possibly the world's greatest living scholar.](#)"

But notice that Welch garbled what Oliver said.

According to Welch, the percentage increased to a possible 90% and he characterized all the suspect personnel as "[Communists](#)" whereas Oliver was more ambiguous and used the descriptive phrase "[members or accomplices of the communist conspiracy](#)" amounting to perhaps as much as 80% of responsible DHEW personnel.

Nowhere are any of these terms defined. They are sufficiently imprecise and vague to permit any interpretation and thus are insusceptible of either proof or refutation---a common semantic problem in conspiracy argumentation.

The FBI received numerous inquiries about this matter and HQ instructed its Boston Field Office to contact Herbert Philbrick to discover what he allegedly told Revilo Oliver.

Here is the FBI memo summary on the matter:

"Herbert Philbrick, a former informant of the Boston Office, has been contacted regarding Oliver's statements and has advised he has never given Oliver any information concerning communist infiltration of the DHEW, that he knows no one in this Department, and has had no information concerning Communist activity in the United States Government since at least 1944. Philbrick considers Oliver to be an extremist in anticommunist feelings and violently anti-Semitic. The Boston Office has advised there is no record of any statement regarding the DHEW in its files emanating from Philbrick. Through a review of the Bureau Security Index cards, it was determined that no employees of the DHEW are included in the [Security Index](#)." [HQ 62-104401-unrecorded, February 1, 1961, F.J. Baumgardner to Alan H. Belmont]

The reference to "[no employees of the DHEW are included in the Security Index](#)" is particularly noteworthy since the SI was designed to be the FBI's method of identifying persons it considered actually or potentially dangerous to U.S. security and that included (a) members of the Communist Party, (b) individuals with Communist sympathies, (c) persons who were leaders within Communist front groups, (d) or persons with "anarchist or revolutionary beliefs".

In short: Nobody that the FBI considered subversive or dangerous to U.S. security was employed within the DHEW!

At the conclusion of the Bureau memo concerning Oliver's DHEW charges, FBI Associate Director Clyde Tolson

handwrote:

"I think we should take a closer look at the John Birch Society. If it publishes such a publication it is suspect."

It is precisely the wild statements made by Welch and Oliver about DHEW that exemplified why the Bureau became suspicious of anyone connected to the Birch Society and why Hoover frequently made statements about the dangers inherent in "self-styled experts on communism, without valid credentials" engaging in "rumor-mongering and hurling false and wholly unsubstantiated allegations..."

To continue to Chapter 5 which pertains to Dr. Harry Overstreet, click link below.

CHAPTER 5 -- HARRY A. OVERSTREET

MY RESEARCH: <http://ernie1241.googlepages.com/home> **EMAIL:** ernie1241@aol.com

[Sign in](#) | [Recent Site Activity](#) | [Report Abuse](#) | [Print Page](#) | Powered By **Google Sites**

Chapter 5 = FBI vs. JBS on Harry Overstreet as a Communist Sympathizer or Dupe

Rev. 02/15/15

During its entire existence, the Birch Society has claimed that it is an "educational" organization, and "an army fighting with facts", "whose only weapon is the truth".

According to Robert Welch in the Foreword to the Blue Book of the John Birch Society:

"For our enemy is the Communists, and we do not intend to lose sight of that fact for a minute. We are fighting the Communists -- **nobody else.**" [JBS Blue Book, 12th printing, 1961, page ii, emphasis in the original].

NOBODY ELSE ??

In 1970, the JBS published a pamphlet by its founder, Robert Welch, entitled "*What Is The John Birch Society?*". In it, Mr. Welch sought to summarize what he considered to be the accomplishments of the JBS during its first 11 years of existence. He singled out for comment his 1959 campaign against Dr. Harry A. Overstreet, author of the 1958 book, "*What We Must Know About Communism*".

Mr. Welch stated that an article appearing in the October 1959 issue of the JBS magazine, *American Opinion* "showed the blatant falsehoods to which Harry Overstreet has resorted in connection with his earlier and continuing close affiliations with Communists and support of Communist purposes." [Edward Janisch, "*What We Must Know About Overstreet*", *American Opinion*, October 1959, pages 35-46.]

Welch further described the Overstreet book as "pro-Communist doubletalk" and he observed that it was "visibly designed to get your confidence with the first three quarters of its contents, and then in the last quarter to sell you the exact current Communist line." [*What Is The John Birch Society?*, 1970, page 18].

In his *American Opinion* article, Edward Janisch states that the Overstreet book, "attempts to make palatable certain notions which would, if accepted, by large numbers of Americans, render us helpless in the face of the onslaught of World Communism." [*American Opinion*, 10/59, page 44].

Who was Edward Janisch and what are his credentials for evaluating internal security matters?

A search of all usual databases and references discloses that Mr. Janisch had no paper trail, i.e. no master's thesis or doctoral dissertation listings, no articles listed in *Reader's Guide To Periodical Literature*, no books or other publications in major university and college library catalogs or in the Library of Congress, no listings in the *New York Times* index, or *Washington Post* index, no biographical sketch in either *American Opinion* or *Current Biography* or *Who's Who in America*, or *The Directory of American Scholars*.

In addition, there is no record that Janisch ever contacted or interviewed Harry Overstreet nor anyone associated with Harry, particularly those persons who had expertise in internal security matters.

I can report, however, that after considerable research I was able to discover that Janisch was an Assistant Professor of Government at a very small college in Pennsylvania. (Slippery Rock College now known as Slippery Rock University in Slippery Rock, PA)

In his *American Opinion* article, Janisch characterizes the philosophy underlying the adult-education career of Dr. Overstreet as follows:

"If, on the other hand, you are one of those 'backward souls' who believes in God, love of country, free enterprise, investigations of Communism...then you are 'immature'; and quite possibly, according to Professor Overstreet, you are on the road to mental illness." [*American Opinion*, 10/59, p. 35].

His reference to "investigations of Communism" will be, as the reader will shortly discover, a particularly vapid and dishonest criticism by Janisch. (See excerpts below from Harry's 1953 testimony, "*Subversive Influences in the Educational Process*")

Janisch repeatedly uses sarcastic comments and sinister innuendo about the loyalty or patriotism of Dr. Overstreet. For example, he describes "all of the books" by Dr. Overstreet thusly:

"His writings are one of the little webs, along with many other webs the Communists weave together to make up the Big Lie of their total web of deception. He does his work with half-truth, glittering generality, misplaced emphasis, significant omission, and other tricks that mark the prolific popularizer and propaganda hack." [*Ibid*, pg 35-36].

In case Janisch's nasty insinuations aren't transparent enough, he then offers what he believes is the Communist evaluation of Dr. Overstreet's book on Communism:

"And the ghost of Stalin must be whispering to Khrushchev, 'for this, there should be dancing on our side of the street'." [*Ibid*, page 35].

According to Janisch:

"Another generation--if we are still free--may well remember the Overstreets' 'What We Know About Communism, as a stupendous attempt that was designed to soften us at the very hour of our crisis...because the book attempts to make palatable certain notions which would, if accepted by large numbers of Americans, render us helpless in the face of the onslaught of World Communism." [*Ibid*, pg 44].

In what will shortly become apparent as a particularly egregious comment, Janisch criticizes Dr. Overstreet because: "Here is a book on Communism in which not one of J. Edgar Hoover's somber warnings is mentioned..." [*Ibid*, pg 44].

In a July 17, 1961 memo to all members of the JBS National Council, Robert Welch discussed suggestion #6 in the *JBS Blue Book* which was to expose "largely through *American Opinion*...the real sympathies (as disclosed by their actions) of those who are assiduously helping the Communists without their true purposes or the significance of their actions being realized."

In particular Welch referred to the Janisch article mentioned above as one example of the type of article he had in mind:

"And our article on Overstreet served well a more specific purpose. It enabled our members in many parts of the country to block completely, or offset the effect of, speaking engagements by this octogenarian phoney, and thus materially to reduce the amount of poison he was pouring into the minds of good Americans from his position of previously unchallenged prestige."

Here, then, is a summary of information contained in key FBI documents about Dr. Harry Overstreet and his wife Bonaro and their relationship with the FBI:

A November 1954 memo summarizes the Bureau relationship with Dr. and Mrs. Overstreet:

"Years ago, Dr. Overstreet got mixed up with some leftwing groups and the Overstreets came to Washington approximately three years ago...to straighten out the record."

They were advised by the FBI to submit affidavits to the House Committee on Un-American Activities concerning their past front associations and contributions and they did so. On July 20, 1953, Harry Overstreet submitted a 15-page single-spaced summary concerning his past affiliations to HUAC Chairman Harold Velde. Harry then offered to testify, under oath, to answer any outstanding questions or concerns. Velde informed Harry that his affidavit was sufficient and his testimony would not be required.

The November 1954 memo continues:

"In addition, the Overstreets went to the Senate Internal Security Subcommittee and Bob Morris used them on a couple of occasions as witnesses. They were very effective in testifying against the Communist aims in education."

In his 1953 testimony, Harry was asked by SISS Chief Counsel Robert Morris if being an active Communist Party member is compatible with being a teacher. Harry's reply was:

"I'm perfectly convinced, Mr. Morris, that it is quite incompatible with being a teacher in an educational system such as our democracy calls for...The Communist way of life is not a free thinking way of life. It is a conspiratorial way of life. It is people organizing themselves to do something to get rid of a type of society that they hate and therefore it comes under the category of conspiratorial activity rather than thinking activity."

When Robert Morris asked Harry if a teacher should be judged solely on their competence in their subject area, Harry replied, **no**, "because teaching is a matter of one's total personality and...the Communist attitude calls for fixity of belief, finality of belief, and intolerance of evidence that goes counter to that belief, a hatred of the going order of society, methods of subterfuge, of deviousness. I would say all of these go counter to what is required in democratic educational processes..."

Morris then asked Harry whether or not colleges and universities should undertake the responsibility of determining if there are Communists on their faculties. Harry replied: **"Yes"** because the **"primary interest of a college or university"** is determining **"how much Communist adherence there is among the teachers because a college wants the best possible teachers."** Harry then cited the University of Washington investigative experience as a **"model"**:

"They did a wonderful job there...First of all, they set out to examine the situation with a complete thoroughness. They took months and months to do that thing. Each hearing went over many days."

[See Overstreet 5/28/53 testimony *"Subversive Influence in the Educational Process"* pages 1017-1029 of *"Hearings Before Subcommittee to Investigate the Administration of The Internal Security Act and Other Internal Security Laws of the Committee on the Judiciary."*]

According to the Overstreets' primary Bureau contact, Assistant Director Louis Nichols:

"There is no question in my mind but that if any one was ever duped through naivety, it is the Overstreets and I think they are doing their utmost in trying to redeem themselves."

[HQ 100-114575-28, November 22, 1954, Louis B. Nichols to Clyde Tolson].

In a September 1955 memo, Assistant Director Nichols again discussed the Overstreets:

"We helped them 3 years ago in explaining away contributions to front groups and the like. They have been very grateful and I have gotten them very much interested in bringing about better understanding in academic circles toward the Bureau."

In October 1955, J. Edgar Hoover dictated a letter of congratulations to Harry on the occasion of his 80th birthday, with the letter to be delivered personally. In early 1956, Hoover sent Overstreet a thank-you note in recognition of Harry's pro-FBI letter that was published in the *Washington Post*.

After the retirement of Louis Nichols, the Overstreets continued their relationship with the Bureau through Inspector William C. Sullivan. In September 1958, a Sullivan memo mentions that he encouraged the Overstreets to write a book **"against communism directed toward liberals and progressives, et cetera, who would not normally read a book condemning communism."**

Sullivan then observed that he provided considerable assistance to the Overstreets during the preparation of their book entitled *"What We Must Know About Communism"*. The assistance consisted of loaning public source material from FBI files and spending **"approximately one night each week (7:00pm to about 11:00pm) during the winter months...devoted to reading and analyzing the materials the Overstreets were preparing."** [HQ 100-114575-90, September 19, 1958, and 100-114575-88, October 1, 1958, William C. Sullivan to Alan H. Belmont].

In another memo, Sullivan states that **"while working with the Overstreets on this book I purposely had them direct 95% of their thinking to the world communist movement believing this would best supplement the Director's book which was directed almost 100% to the communist movement in the United States."** [HQ 100-114575-92, November 25, 1958, Sullivan to Belmont].

A formal review of the Overstreet book was prepared at the Bureau in October 1958 after Harry sent a copy to Hoover inscribed from both him and his wife as follows:

"To J. Edgar Hoover -- With personal gratitude for what you have superbly done for all of us."

The review concluded that **"this new book represents cogent advice to the thinking public. It reflects ideas common to the thinking which has gone on in the Bureau for many years."** It also was described as a **"welcome new aid"** in combating Communism. [HQ

100-114575-91, October 1, 1958, W.C. Sullivan to Alan H. Belmont].

In December 1958, Hoover wrote to Harry after reading a newspaper article about him:

"I have seen the interesting article about Mrs. Overstreet and you which appeared in the December 3, 1958 issue of the '*Northern Virginia Sun*'. It is always a pleasure to read about good friends because it serves as a reminder of happy associations. It is good to see your fine work recognized in this fitting manner, and your many friends in the FBI join me in sending our best wishes." [HQ 100-114575-93, December 5, 1958, J. Edgar Hoover to Harry Overstreet]

In early 1959, J. Edgar Hoover declined a dinner invitation from Harry Overstreet but replied to him as follows:

"I do hope that your fine book '*What We Must Know About Communism*' will enjoy excellent sales and wide reading throughout 1959. We need more and more people like yourselves who will devote their nationally recognized academic talents to the exposure and ultimate defeat of the menace of world communism." [HQ 100-114575-95, January 21, 1959, J. Edgar Hoover to Harry Overstreet].

In January 1959, Director Hoover was contacted by Attorney General Herbert Brownell to solicit his evaluation of the Overstreet book. The AG wanted to know if Hoover agreed with a favorable review written by columnist Roscoe Drummond which appeared in the *Washington Post* of January 26, 1959. Hoover replied that he did agree with the Drummond column and Hoover suggested that all Justice Department employees should be encouraged to read the book.

Assistant Director C.D. DeLoach requested and received Hoover's permission to contact the Director of the Americanism Commission of the American Legion to request that they add the Overstreet book to their recommended reading list. Per DeLoach's letter, "[We agree that it is a good one and would you please put it on your approved list?](#)" [HQ 100-114575-100, February 2, 1959, W.C. Sullivan to A.H. Belmont, and, 94-1-17998-139 attachment, February 2, 1959, C.D. DeLoach to American Legion].

Former FBI security informant Herbert Philbrick made the following comment about the Overstreets' 1958 book, *What We Must Know About Communism*:

"The Overstreets have made a unique and valuable contribution to understanding the power and nature of the communist totalitarian system today threatening the freedom of the world." [*Oakland CA Tribune*, 3/31/59, p11]

Conservative columnist George Sokolsky, praised the Overstreets' book in his nationally syndicated "*These Days*" column:

"The Overstreets do an excellent job of objective writing in this field...and this book is well worth reading." [*Newark OH Advocate*, 10/2/58, p6, George Sokolsky: "*Two Useful Books About Communism*"]

In February 1961, J. Edgar Hoover responded to an inquiry about the Overstreet book. The Bureau file copy has the following notation:

"We have had cordial relations with Dr. and Mrs. Harry Allen Overstreet and have furnished them considerable assistance in connection with their books." [HQ 100-114575-115, February 17, 1961, Hoover to name deleted for privacy].

The controversy over Overstreet and his book continued for years often due to the JBS smear campaign against him and his wife which took the form of attempting to get Harry's speaking engagements cancelled due to his alleged pro-Communist sympathies and/or by planting hostile questioners in his audiences.

After his retirement from the FBI, Assistant Director Louis B. Nichols continued to defend Harry and Bonaro Overstreet from critics who raised questions about the Overstreets' loyalty and patriotism. In July 1959, for example, Mr. Nichols wrote a letter to Frank Hanighen, the publisher of the conservative newspaper, *Human Events*, [HE] in response to an article which appeared in the 7/8/59 issue of HE that unfairly attacked the Overstreets. The letter by Nichols mentions the irony of the fact that writings by Overstreet were also attacked in Communist publications! See Nichols letter here:



In September 1960, the Americanism Committee of the American Legion's Waldo M. Slaton Post #140 in Atlanta GA published a 112 page booklet entitled "*The Truth About the Foreign Policy Association*" which contained highly pejorative comments about Harry Overstreet on pages 69-73. This booklet was written by Charles Ralph Nichols and his wife Lois.

In response to this attack on the Overstreets, the Southeastern Regional Director of the Foreign Policy Association (David E. Warner) sent Charles and Lois Nichols several items -- including a notarized affidavit by former FBI Assistant Director Louis B. Nichols (no relation to Charles) dated July 18, 1962 attesting to the loyalty and patriotism of the Overstreets. He also enclosed favorable comments about Overstreet which were made by such conservative columnists as George Sokolsky and former FBI informant Herbert A. Philbrick. [HQ 61-7802 is the FBI file on Foreign Policy Association, and serial #207 discusses the controversy over the Nichols' affidavit in support of the Overstreets.]

Overstreet 1964 book, *The Strange Tactics of Extremism*

In early 1964 Overstreet was sent material to assist him in refuting charges made by extreme right individuals and groups including Edgar Bundy (Church League of America) and Dan Smoot (former FBI Special Agent who retired in 1950). Note: see links to my detailed reports regarding Dan Smoot and Edgar Bundy at bottom of page here:

<http://ernie1241.googlepages.com/home>

Bundy, whom the FBI described as "a professional anticommunist with whom we have absolutely no dealings" had misrepresented Director Hoover's statements from a 1949 article on Communist influence in religion, and, Dan Smoot was in the habit, from the Bureau's perspective, of making "unfactual and inaccurate statements...concerning national and international problems" and was wrongly capitalizing upon his former association with the Bureau to inflate his credibility. [See Chapter 7 of this Report for more background on Smoot.]

In the summer of 1964, Harry Overstreet furnished advance excerpts to the Bureau of his forthcoming book on the extreme right. The Bureau's favorable review concluded that:

"The material has been reviewed and checked previously by the Domestic Intelligence Division. From our point of view, there does not appear to be anything objectionable."

Assistant Director C.D. DeLoach handwrote an observation on the memo about the Overstreet chapter on Dan Smoot: "I'm glad they're doing this. It's about time someone called his hand."

[HQ 100-114575-139, July 23, 1964, M.A. Jones to C.D. DeLoach].

In October 1965, J. Edgar Hoover wrote 90th birthday greetings to Harry "on Director's note paper used for special congratulatory purpose" which was delivered personally and read to Harry by Assistant Director William Sullivan:

"By utilizing your unique experience and abilities in the field of education and psychology in your analyses of communism and its threat to freedom, you have contributed significantly to the intelligent and, therefore, more effective opposition to communism."

[HQ 100-114575-153, October 25, 1965, J. Edgar Hoover to Harry Overstreet].

Overstreets 1969 book on FBI

In 1969, W.W. Norton Company published *The FBI In Our Open Society* by Harry and Bonaro Overstreet.

Director Hoover was so impressed with the book that he notified all Special Agents in Charge of Field Offices via SAC Letter 69-14, dated 2/25/69: ["This is an excellent book and portrays the FBI in a most favorable way."](#)

Hoover announced that the Bureau had made arrangements with the publisher for a special discount price and he instructed SAC's to ["survey your personnel and advise the Bureau promptly of the number of books to be sent to your office."](#)

The Bureau added the new Overstreet book to its *"Autograph Card Form 8-2"* which contained those publications which the FBI distributed at no charge with *"best wishes"* from Hoover himself.

Hoover also instructed Special Agent J. Sizoo to prepare a synopsis of each chapter so that Bureau personnel could use the summary as a ["ready reference...in rebutting numerous unfounded claims against the Bureau..."](#)
[HQ 66-04-3648, SAC Letter 69-14, February 25, 1969 and HQ 100-114575-184, June 4, 1969, A.W. Gray to W.C. Sullivan].

When Harry died in 1970, senior FBI officials discussed Overstreet's passing and their recommendation that Director Hoover send a condolence telegram to his wife Bonaro:

8/17/70 = M.A. Jones memo to Mr. Bishop on Harry Overstreet:

["We learned that captioned individual died this morning. As you know, Dr. Overstreet and his wife Bonaro Overstreet, were ardent friends and supporters of Mr. Hoover and the FBI. In fact, they had just authored an excellent book about the FBI entitled 'The FBI In Our Open Society' which has been well received."](#)

["Dr. Harry Overstreet is the author of numerous books and articles and is extremely well known for his scholarship. He formerly was a university professor and has maintained an active interest not only in education but also in law enforcement. The Overstreets were personally known to Assistant to the Director Sullivan. Over the years, the Bureau received a number of inquiries from citizens accusing the Overstreets of being either pro-communist or extremely liberal. Actually, neither in his writings or his speeches did Dr. Overstreet ever manifest any sympathy for communism. His recent books have been devoted to alerting the American public to the subversive nature of communism as well as the evils of extremism of the far right. The Director wrote letters to Dr. Overstreet on the occasion of both his 80th and 90th birthdays, the latter being 10/25/65. It is felt the Director would want to write a telegram of sympathy to Mrs. Overstreet. Recommendation: That attached telegram be sent to Mrs. Overstreet."](#) [HQ 100-114575, #195; 8/17/70 memo from M.A. Jones to Mr. Bishop re: Dr. Harry A. Overstreet and telegram to Mrs. Overstreet; section 5 of file, pages 145-146.]

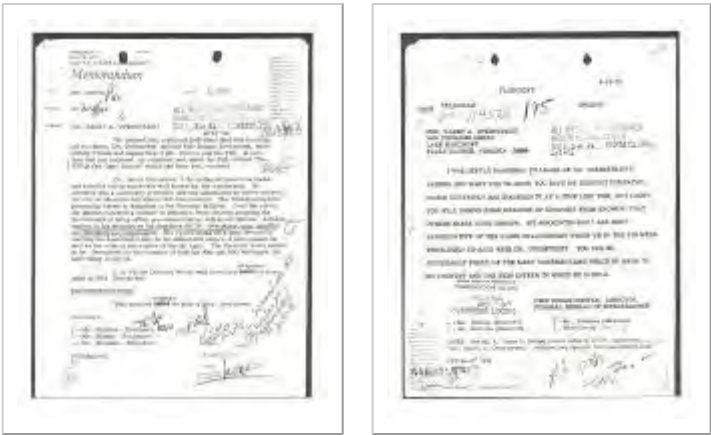
Notation on copy of memo states: ["Discussed with the Director. He approved"](#) per W.C. Sullivan 8/17/70.

TELEGRAM TEXT BY HOOVER:

["I was deeply saddened to learn of Dr. Overstreet's passing and want you to know you have my deepest sympathy. Words certainly are inadequate at a time like this, but I hope you will derive some measure of comfort from knowing that others share your sorrow. My associates and I are most appreciative of the close relationship which we in the FBI were privileged to have with Dr. Overstreet. You can be justifiably proud of the many contributions which he made to his country and the high esteem in which he is held. John Edgar Hoover, Director, Federal Bureau of Investigation."](#)

Dr. Overstreet was on Bureau's "Special Correspondents' List."

You may see the actual memo and telegram in section 5 of his FBI HQ main file here:
https://archive.org/stream/foia_Overstreet_Harry_A.-HQ-5/Overstreet_Harry_A.-HQ-5#page/n0/mode/2up



In its 1959 Report, the California Senate Factfinding Subcommittee on Un-American Activities portrayed Dr. Overstreet as an expert on communism of the caliber of Eugene Lyons, Elizabeth Bentley, Whittaker Chambers, Louis Budenz among others. The Report mentions that Overstreet was invited by the U.S. Senate Internal Security Subcommittee to participate in hearings concerning the internal menace of communism. The California Subcommittee describes Overstreet as follows:

"Mr. Overstreet is an example of a non-Communist liberal who was attracted to a few of these front organizations, found out what they were all about, and had the courage to do something about the problem instead of shrinking away from the experience and remaining silent. Many people who have had similar experiences--in fact the overwhelming majority of them--are content to remain silent..."

[1959 Report, pages 169 and 183].

Harry's wife, Bonaro, sent a letter to the California Senate Fact-Finding Subcommittee on Un-American Activities to thank them for recognizing that liberals "not previously alert" to Communist influence "could become aware...of the Communist menace" and "not be forever branded as pro-Communist."

[1965 Report, page 176]

Robert Morris, the former Chief Counsel of the U.S. Senate Internal Security Subcommittee, had a close personal relationship with the Overstreets. Morris wrote to me in March 1989 about the Overstreets. Here is an excerpt:

"I did know Harry and Bonaro Overstreet in the late 1950's and 1960's. They were introduced to me by Louis Nichols when he was Assistant Director of the FBI. They were most helpful to me in my capacity of Chief Counsel to the U.S. Senate Internal Security Subcommittee...They became my friends and I am still grateful for their friendship."

See Morris letter here:



Morris invited the Overstreets to testify as expert witnesses before the Senate Internal Security Subcommittee:
[See Harry and Bonaro Overstreet testimony: "Reaching Through To Young Minds" in Education For Survival in The Struggle

Against World Communism: A Symposium - SISS, 4/12/62 Committee Print, pages 88-93]

Former FBI Security Informant Herbert A. Philbrick of "*I Led 3 Lives*" fame wrote to Senator William Proxmire in 1961 concerning his sources of information regarding Communist infiltration into the U.S. Government.

"During my lectures across the country, however, I do refer frequently to scholars and others who have extensive knowledge in this area."

Among the persons he cited as experts were: Harry and Bonaro Overstreet, Robert Morris, and James Burnham. [Boston FBI file 66-1020-575, February 11, 1961, Herbert A. Philbrick to Sen. William Proxmire].

Ironically, the Birch Society attacks on Overstreet and his book *What We Must Know About Communism* were echoed by Communist Party officials such as William Z. Foster who described the book as follows:

"Here is assembled an extensive collection of prejudices, distortions, and so-called arguments against the Soviet Union and socialism. In addition to the run-of-the-mill reactionaries cited as authorities, there are the opportunists: Djilas, Koestler, Lovestone, Browder and John Gates. The red-baiting has a faint tinge of liberal pretense---it is Hooverism with a shave and a haircut. But its purpose is to keep the cold war going, and to make it hotter if possible...It is sheer propaganda for the most reactionary phases of government policy...The Overstreets make the usual bourgeois idealization of capitalist society. They blithely pass by the two world wars, which were monster crimes of capitalism, as though it had nothing to do with them. They are just as myopic about other capitalist disasters--fascism, depressions, mass unemployment etc...The Overstreet naive assumption is that capitalism is a sort of God-given system beyond the reach of criticism." ...

"The authors undertake to tell the readers what communism is. Here the thesis is familiar. It is the FBI '*theory*' which we have heard expounded in many witch-hunting trials ad nauseam, that the communist movement is a conspiracy, a plot against democracy. The Overstreets informs us that the whole plot began with Lenin--and before him, Marx...The Soviet Union is that '*gigantic fruit of conspiracy, the Bolshevik revolution*', the result of the plotting of a few misguided and desperate men."

"Through such thought and scholarship, history is reduced to nonsense." ...

"The general effects of *What We Must Know About Communism* will be to blind even more the reactionary elements who will be the main readers of this book, as to what is actually taking place in the world...In it, however, they will learn nothing of any value about the Communist movement, either of this country or of the world. Those who really want to find out just what communism is, and what it means for the welfare of humanity, must look elsewhere than between the covers of the Overstreets' Kampf." [William Z. Foster, *The Overstreets' Kampf*, Mainstream, May 1959, pp 39-44].

A reviewer for the *World Marxist Review* also attacked both the book and the Overstreets and claimed that they did not understand capitalism plus they distorted facts and falsely described Communism as conspiratorial. [E. Arab-Ogly, *Executors of John F. Dulles' Will*, World Marxist Review, 10/60, pp. 83-86].

During a February 1966 press conference, Communist Party leader Gus Hall referred to Harry Overstreet's "**filthy criminal falsehoods**" against the Communist movement. [HQ 100-114575-164, 3/23/66 memo from W.C. Sullivan to C. DeLoach]

Harry probably deserves a spot in the Guinness Book of Records because he must be the only supposed Communist sympathizer who ever wrote a highly favorable review of J. Edgar Hoover's book, *Masters of Deceit*! [See June 1958 *National Parent-Teacher*, page 32] (national PTA magazine).

For chapters 6-7, click here: [JBS - chapters 6-7](#)

More info: ernie1241@aol.com MY RESEARCH: <http://ernie1241.googlepages.com/home>

Chapter 6 = FBI vs JBS on Civil Rights Movement

Chapter 7 = FBI vs JBS on Persons JBS Claims To Be "Experts" on Communism

Revised 09/01/13

Chapter 6

FBI VS. JBS ON CIVIL RIGHTS MOVEMENT

JBS on Communist Civil Rights Strategy - "*Negro Soviet Republic*" and

Alan Stang's 1965 book, *It's Very Simple: The True Story of Civil Rights* and

Highlander Folk School as a "*Communist Training School*" and

Gary Allen's article on August 1965 Watts Riots entitled, "*The Plan To Burn Los Angeles*" and

The Birch Society on African-American Labor Leader, A. Philip Randolph

Control and domination of the civil rights movement by subversive elements is a constant theme in JBS literature during the 1960's.

According to Robert Welch in "*The Time Has Come*", a 1964 JBS pamphlet, the Communist civil rights strategy since 1928 was to stir up racial bitterness and rioting while promising "*to convert the Dixie states into a Negro Soviet Republic...*" This theme was echoed in a Birch Society national newspaper ad from August 1965 captioned "*What's Wrong With Civil Rights?*" and it also was repeated by other JBS-recommended sources such as Dan Smoot and Alan Stang.

According to Dan Smoot:

"In 1928, Joseph Stalin gave specific directions: the communist goal was to confiscate the property

of all whites in the 'black-belt' region of the American southern States, detach the region from the Union, and establish it as a Negro Soviet Republic. This communist objective has never been altered." (*Dan Smoot Report*, 2/22/65, page 57; my emphasis in red type)

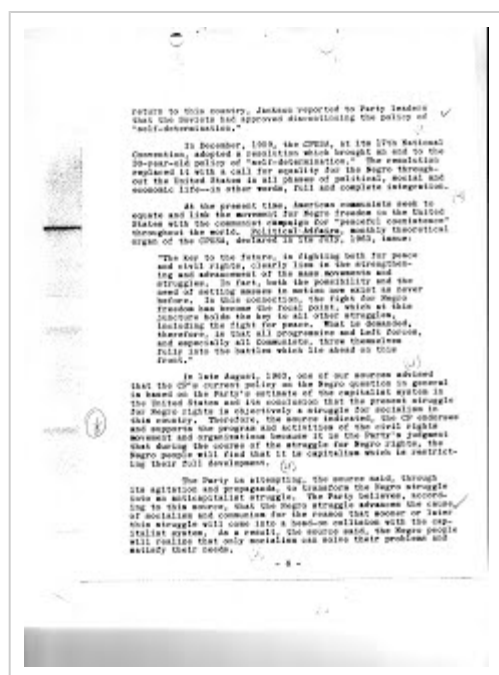
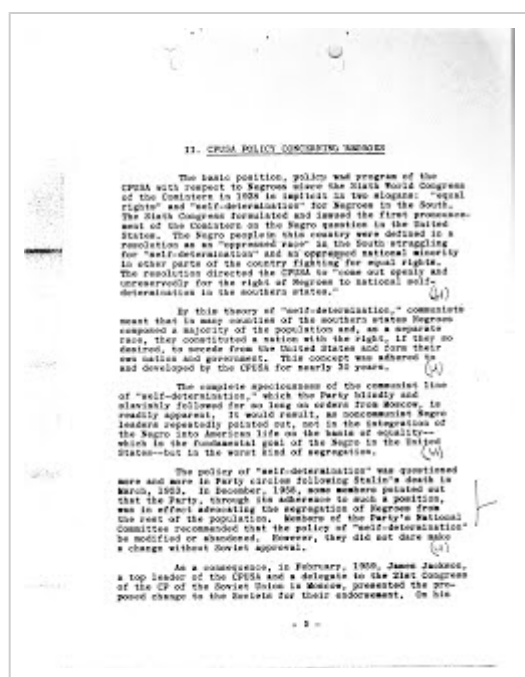
Alan Stang devoted chapter 3 of his 1965 JBS-published book, *It's Very Simple: The True Story of Civil Rights*, to discussion of this "strategy". [See "*The Communist Position on the Negro Question*", pages 28-37]

By contrast, J. Edgar Hoover pointed out in his January 1960 testimony before the Senate Internal Security Subcommittee that the 17th National Convention of the Communist Party USA held in New York City on December 10, 1959 had discarded that position:

"The Negro resolution adopted by the convention discarded the party's historic position advocating 'self-determination' meaning that Negroes should be given the right to form a separate nation in the Southern States... The 1959 convention resolution hence represents a party admission that its position concerning Negroes is bankrupt. Time itself has shown that the party is not interested in the welfare of the Negro, but only in using him as a tool to advance party interests." [J. Edgar Hoover: *An Analysis of the 17th National Convention of the Communist Party USA*; Statement made to Senate Internal Security Subcommittee, 1/17/60, page 7; Also see: *FBI Law Enforcement Bulletin*, March 1960 - for same comment.]

In August 1963, the FBI prepared a comprehensive 76-page summary regarding Communist strategy with respect to our civil rights movement. I copy below the pertinent section regarding the Communist strategy regarding "self-determination"

"By this theory of 'self-determination', communists meant that in many counties of the southern states Negroes composed a majority of the population and, as a separate race, they constituted a nation with the right, if they so desired, to secede from the United States and form their own nation and government. This concept was adhered to and developed by the CPUSA for nearly 30 years...The policy of 'self-determination' was questioned more and more in Party circles following Stalin's death in March, 1953. In December, 1958, some members pointed out that the Party, through its adherence to such a position, was in effect advocating the segregation of Negroes from the rest of the population. Members of the Party's National Committee recommended that the policy of 'self-determination' be modified or abandoned. However, they did not dare make a change without Soviet approval. As a consequence, in February 1959, James Jackson, a top leader of the CPUSA and a delegate to the 21st Congress of the CP of the Soviet Union in Moscow, presented the proposed change to the Soviets for their endorsement. Upon his return to this country, Jackson reported to Party leaders that the Soviets had approved discontinuing the policy of 'self-determination'. In December 1959, the CPUSA, at its 17th National Convention, adopted a resolution which brought an end to the 30-year-old policy of 'self-determination'. The resolution replaced it with a call for equality for the Negro throughout the United States in all phases of political, social, and economic life---in other words, full and complete integration." [HQ 100-3-116, #253X = 8/23/63 FBI monograph "*Communist Party USA—Negro Question*", page 5-6]. See images below.



Even the KKK newspaper, *The Fiery Cross*, recognized this change of Communist strategy!

"With the CPUSA steadily declining in open membership, the official doctrine was changed from creating a separate Negro state in the U.S. to one of full integration. (Ben) Davis [National Secretary CPUSA] had argued for this change in order to obtain maximum Negro support. The party line change became official in 1959." [*The Fiery Cross*, "Communist Exploitation of the U.S. Racial Crisis", August 1964, page 1]

Furthermore, this change of Communist strategy was confirmed by FBI informants who subsequently testified before the House Committee on Un-American Activities—including Lola Belle Holmes---

JBS member who had infiltrated the CPUSA for the FBI!

Lola Belle Holmes testified about the internal CP dispute at its 17th National Convention in New York City over a document entitled "*Theoretical Aspects of the Negro Question In the United States*".

Lola told the House Committee on Un-American Activities that:

"This document was a very controversial document and the theoretical aspect of the Negro question was a very controversial question. It took up more time in the national convention than any other question because the CP does not fight for equal rights of Negroes; only in theory; it is not especially interested in the Negro problems; it does not want to solve the Negro problems. Therefore, it was a problem to get the Communist Party to act on a Negro resolution supporting the civil rights movement, that is, integration for Negroes. The Communist Party, when I went into the Party in 1957...advocated Negro nationalism, and a separate State for the Negroes, self-determination, and we fought to get the Communist Party to do away with Negro nationalism and fight for integration." [Communist Activities in the Chicago IL area, Part 1; Hearings Before the Committee on Un-American Activities, May 25, 1965, page 360.]

In the June 1965 *JBS Bulletin*, Mr. Welch observed: "Our task must be simply to make clear that the movement known as '*civil rights*' is Communist-plotted, Communist-controlled, and in fact...serves only Communist purposes."

In August 1965, the JBS ran a full-page ad in many U.S. newspapers entitled "*What's Wrong With Civil Rights?*" One of the answers provided by the JBS was:

"For the civil rights movement in the United States with all of its growing agitation and riots and bitterness, and insidious steps toward the appearance of civil war, has not been infiltrated by the Communists, as you now frequently hear. It has been deliberately and almost wholly created by the Communists patiently building up to this present stage for more than thirty years." [HQ 62-104401, serial #2621, 8/31/65 airtel from SAC Birmingham to J. Edgar Hoover with attachment of ad from Sunday 8/29/65 *Birmingham AL News*.]

In the November 1966 *JBS Bulletin*, Robert Welch declared:

"We have said many times, and we repeat now, that if you can fully expose the civil rights fraud, you will break the back of the Communist conspiracy. But the word '*fully*' is important in that sentence. It calls for bringing a preponderant majority of our fellow citizens really to grasp the fact that the '*civil rights*' program has been designed by Communists, is controlled by Communists, and will be used by the Communists as a vital part of their total strategy for taking over our country."

In the November 1965 *JBS Bulletin*, Mr. Welch strongly recommended Alan Stang's book entitled *It's Very Simple: The True Story of Civil Rights* because, in Welch's words, "It gives the whole picture of the '*civil rights*' development, as a part of Communist strategy, more completely and convincingly than anything else available."

Again, in May 1966, Mr. Welch used the *JBS Bulletin* to heap praise upon Stang's book:

"This book, because of its thoroughness, its comprehensive coverage of the whole 'civil rights' story, and its meticulous documentation, is the best single searchlight we have for exposing the 'civil rights' fraud."

According to Alan Stang, the "civil rights movement was not only planned by the Communists, but was begun, is staffed, and is conducted by the Communists—and has only one real purpose: the destruction and communization of America."

In May 1965, the Special Agent in Charge of the Boston FBI Field Office forwarded proof sheets of the Stang book to FBI Headquarters, two months before its scheduled publication. An evaluation of the book was prepared for Assistant Director W.C. Sullivan by F.J. Baumgardner:

"*It's Very Simple* is an attempt to rationalize today's civil rights movement in this country as primarily a communist operation...Practically all his documentation is to public source material and there is no significant information in the book which appears to be new and previously unknown to the Bureau. Stang makes frequent use of literary license and importantly fails to include documentation for key passages (examples appear on pages 101 and 185). An entire chapter (14) is devoted to an attack on civil rights legislation and the book, in general, is critical of all Administration and other efforts aimed at improving the lot of the Negro." [HQ 100-106670-1412, May 28, 1965, and 100-106670-1525, June 24, 1965, both F.J. Baumgardner to W.C. Sullivan].

The concluding "Observations" paragraph states:

"The details of the book do not support the strong conclusions reached by the author. We have had available to us all the material which Stang has plus considerable additional data from our investigations and we could not arrive at such conclusions. The impression is received that Stang may have well started with his conclusions and then developed the information and manner of presentation which he hoped would prove his point. This work must be viewed in the light of the author's apparent close connections with Robert Welch and the John Birch Society." [Ibid]

ALAN STANG RESEARCH HABITS

At this point some context about Alan Stang's research habits might be appropriate to supplement the FBI's evaluation.

Alan Stang authored the *American Opinion* magazine article that resulted in an historic precedent-setting libel lawsuit by Chicago lawyer Elmer Gertz against Robert Welch, Inc. [The article by Stang was entitled, "*Frame-Up-Richard Nuccio and the War on Police*" which was published in the April 1969 issue of the Birch Society monthly magazine, *American Opinion*. Richard Nuccio was a Birch Society member and section leader -- and his family later harshly criticized the JBS for what they claimed was its lack of proper support.]

Two juries on two separate occasions found the Alan Stang article to be libelous and the second jury awarded Gertz \$300,000 in punitive damages in addition to \$100,000 compensatory damages. Ultimately, the Gertz matter wound up being heard before the U.S. Supreme Court.

http://www.oyez.org/cases/1970-1979/1973/1973_72_617

During the Oral Arguments before the U.S. Supreme Court on 11/14/73, the Birch Society was represented by Clyde J. Watts (a JBS National Council member).

http://www.oyez.org/sites/default/files/audio/cases/1973/72-617_19731114-lq-argument.mp3

During the oral arguments, Clyde Watts was asked by a Justice:

"I understand Counsel brought a petition to say that it had been conceded at the trial that the article was libelous - do you deny that?"

Watts observed that he did not think the article was libelous but he acknowledged that during the original trial

At 35:04 = "It was conceded that some of the remarks in the article were false."

At 36:01 = Watts admits that:

"Under Illinois law, the inference and impact of the article, absent the *New York Times* concept, would be libelous in Illinois. I think the Court is accurate in that observation."

The Birch Society's defense was not that their article was truthful and accurate! Instead, the JBS wanted the Supreme Court to allow the JBS to claim the protection of the then-prevailing so-called "*New York Times standard*" with respect to discussion of "*public figures*". As Watts confirmed above, absent the protection of the *New York Times* standard, the article was FALSE and LIBELOUS.

On 6/25/74, U.S. Supreme Court Justice Lewis F. Powell delivered the U.S. Supreme Court decision [docket number 72-617] which pertained to the appeal of the first Gertz trial verdict.

http://www.oyez.org/sites/default/files/audio/cases/1973/72-617_19740625-opinion.mp3

Justice Powell stated that this case "involves a libel action by a reputable attorney against a magazine that falsely libeled him 'a *Leninist*' and a '*Communist-fronter*'."

Finally, just for clarification:

The Gertz trial jury was not permitted to award punitive damages for libel unless there was a

showing of "malice" which in legalese is "reckless disregard for the truth". Gertz was able to demonstrate to the satisfaction of the jury, an Appeals Court, and the Supreme Court that such punitive damages were applicable.

The 1982 Appeals Court decision made the following comments about Scott Stanley Jr. (editor of *American Opinion*) and Alan Stang (the author of the defamatory article about Gertz).

"In summary, Stanley conceived of a story line; solicited Stang, a writer with a known and unreasonable propensity to label persons or organizations as Communist, to write the article; and after the article was submitted, made virtually no effort to check the validity of statements that were defamatory per se of Gertz, and in fact added further defamatory material based on Stang's 'facts'. There was more than enough evidence for the jury to conclude that this article was published with utter disregard for the truth or falsity of the statements contained in the article about Gertz." [U.S. Court of Appeals for the Seventh Circuit, No. 81-2483, *Elmer Gertz v. Robert Welch, Inc.*, 6/16/82, page 20].

There is also a footnote appended to this paragraph in which the Appeals Court observed that:

"Furthermore, Stang's conduct in investigating and researching the article also is evidence of actual malice."...

Copied below is an excerpt from the Supreme Court decision. "Petitioner" refers to Gertz.

"According to the article, the police file on petitioner took 'a big, Irish cop to lift.' The article stated that petitioner had been an official of the 'Marxist League for Industrial Democracy, originally known as the Intercollegiate Socialist Society, which has advocated the violent seizure of our government.' It labeled Gertz a 'Leninist' and a 'Communist-fronter.' It also stated that Gertz had been an officer of the National Lawyers Guild, described as a Communist organization that 'probably did more than any other outfit to plan the Communist attack on the Chicago police during the 1968 Democratic Convention.'

These statements contained serious inaccuracies. The implication that petitioner had a criminal record was false. Petitioner had been a member and officer of the National Lawyers Guild some 15 years earlier, but there was no evidence that he or that organization had taken any part in planning the 1968 demonstrations in Chicago. There was also no basis for the charge that petitioner was a 'Leninist' or a 'Communist-fronter.' And he had never been a member of the 'Marxist League for Industrial Democracy' or the 'Intercollegiate Socialist Society.'"

See 1974 Supreme Court Decision at:

<http://supreme.justia.com/us/418/323/case.html>

Additional Appeals Court comments from 1972 and 1982 are copied below:

7th Circuit Court of Appeals:

<http://ftp.resource.org/courts.gov/c/F2/471/471.F2d.801.71-1175.71-1174.html>

August 1, 1972; 471 F.2d 801

"Plaintiff [Gertz] is a reputable lawyer. Defendant [Robert Welch, Inc.] published an article describing him as a "Communist-fronter," "Leninist," and participant in various "Marxist" and "Red" activities. The author of the article [Stang] is not a party and did not testify. We assume, without deciding, that, as the district court held, the article was libelous per se as a matter of Illinois law and that its author was either deliberately or recklessly mendacious."

"In December, 1968, Stanley requested Stang to prepare an article on the murder trial of a Chicago police officer named Nuccio. Stang accepted, came to Chicago to make an investigation, consulted with Stanley over the long distance telephone a few times, and submitted his completed draft on February 18, 1969, in time for inclusion in the April edition which was scheduled for distribution in early March. Stanley made no effort to verify the accuracy of anything said in Stang's article. Based on statements in the text, Stanley drafted an introductory comment and captions for illustrations. Before the article was conceived, Stanley, whose office is in Boston, had never heard of the plaintiff."

"About 42,000 copies of the magazine were distributed nationally and about 86,000 reprints were printed, of which about 5,000 were sold or given away in Illinois."

"Ruling on various pretrial motions, the district court held as a matter of law that the publication was libelous per se, and that applicability of the *New York Times* standard depended on issues of fact that could not be resolved on summary judgment.

"At the trial plaintiff established that defendant had made no independent verification of any of the statements in Stang's article, that critical comments about plaintiff were false and unsupported, and that plaintiff was a well known and well regarded member of the Illinois bar. Defendant sought to prove that it was justified, on the basis of past experience, in assuming, without checking before publishing it, that Stang's article was accurate. Defendant also offered to prove that it did in good faith seek to verify the statements about plaintiff after the suit was filed, but the court sustained plaintiff's objection to the relevance of this testimony."

From June 16, 1982, 7th Circuit Court of Appeals:

<http://bulk.resource.org/courts.gov/c/F2/680/680.F2d.527.81-2483.html#fn15>

"In April, 1969, shortly after Nuccio's initial conviction, an article appeared in *American Opinion* entitled "Frame-Up-Richard Nuccio and the War on Police." *American Opinion* is a monthly magazine published by defendant Robert Welch, Inc. ("Welch"), a Massachusetts corporation which is an affiliate of the John Birch Society. The article alleged that Nuccio was being "railroaded" as part of a Communist conspiracy to undermine local police so as to pave the way for a national police force which would support and enforce a Communist dictatorship.

The article named Gertz as one of the members of this conspiracy. He was identified as the lawyer for the Nelson family and one of the leaders of the "attack on Nuccio." Gertz was described as a "Communist-fronter," a "Leninist," and a "Marxist."

The assertion that Gertz was a Communist or part of a Communist conspiracy was false. Many of the other statements concerning his membership in particular organizations also were false.

After a six-day trial, the jury found in favor of Gertz and awarded compensatory damages of \$100,000 and punitive damages of \$300,000. It is from this judgment that Welch appeals. ...

"Furthermore, Stang's conduct in investigating and researching the article also is evidence of actual malice. Stang's conduct is attributable to Welch because of the agency relationship between them. Stang was solicited to write this specific article, was given the story line and background material, was reimbursed for his expenses, and kept in contact with Stanley during the preparation of the article. These facts, particularly the significant control exercised by Stanley over the content and focus of the article, are sufficient to establish an agency relationship. See *City of Evanston v. Piotrowicz*, 20 Ill.2d 512, 518-19, 170 N.E.2d 569, 573 (1960); *Johnston v. Suckow*, 55 Ill.App.3d 277, 280, 12 Ill.Dec. 846, 849, 370 N.E.2d 650, 653 (1977); *Reith v. Gen. Tel. Co.*, 22 Ill.App.3d 337, 339, 317 N.E.2d 369, 372 (1974). The implications of that relationship are that the acts of the agent are attributable to the principal. *Gomien v. Wear-Ever Aluminum, Inc.*, 50 Ill.2d 19, 21, 276 N.E.2d 336, 338 (1971); *Windsor Lake, Inc. v. WROK*, 94 Ill.App.2d 403, 410, 236 N.E.2d 913, 917 (1968)

Stang's research for this article was akin to the '*slipshod and sketchy investigatory techniques*' condemned in *Curtis Publishing Co. v. Butts*, 388 U.S. 130, 169-70, 87 S.Ct. 1975, 1998-1999, 18 L.Ed.2d 1094 (1967) (Warren, C. J., concurring).

Stang visited Chicago twice to research the article. None of the persons he interviewed told him that Gertz had been involved in the criminal prosecution of Nuccio. He did not interview any of the lawyers involved in the criminal or civil actions against Nuccio. He read the transcript of Nuccio's criminal trial and looked at the pleadings filed in the civil case, which had the names of Gertz and Ralla Klepak on them. He also talked to an unnamed Chicago police officer who gave him notes taken from Gertz's police intelligence file. Stang admitted at trial, however, that he had no knowledge of the source of the information in the files or whether the information was accurate. Stang also testified that he consulted government documents about the organizations listed in Gertz's police intelligence file. This was not an exhaustive search of government records, but rather a selective use of particular reports of certain congressional committees published twenty to thirty years earlier. The only facts verified in these reports were Gertz's membership in the National Lawyers' Guild to 1950, and that the Guild had been identified as a Communist-front organization. Stang made no effort to find out if Gertz was still a member of the Guild, nor did he attempt to contact or interview Gertz."

BIRCH SOCIETY ON 1965 WATTS RIOTS

Another example of how the Birch Society circulated false and inflammatory information can be found in an article appearing in the May 1967 JBS magazine, *American Opinion*, by one of its most prolific writers, Gary Allen. The article was entitled "*The Plan To Burn Los Angeles*". A reprint of this article was often sold on literature tables at JBS-sponsored events such as JBS speakers

appearing under the auspices of the JBS-front group, Truth About Civil Turmoil.

Gary Allen claimed in his article that a group of "40-50 Negroes sent by the Communists into the Los Angeles area from all over the United States" was known to the Los Angeles Police Department as "*The Organization*". According to Allen, this group was "a board of revolutionary strategy" which "planned, engineered, and instigated the Watts rebellion..." in August 1965. Allen further stated that, "It was this team of highly trained Communists - The Organization - which planned and directed what happened in Watts."

By contrast, investigative reporters for the *Los Angeles Times* contacted the Los Angeles Police Department Intelligence Division for comment. Its senior officer, Harold E. Yarnell Jr. stated that the Allen report was false. [See *Los Angeles Times*, 4/28/67, part II, pA6, "*Watts Riot As Rehearsal For Red Coup Discounted*".]

The following excerpt from the *L.A. Times* article pertains to comments made by Gary Allen:

"Police Chief Tom Reddin has disputed a John Birch Society magazine article citing unnamed police as authority that the 1965 Watts riot was a rehearsal for a nationwide Communist revolution to be touched off by total burning of Los Angeles. '*The facts as stated in the article are not based on information in our files*' Reddin said. '*We do not reach the same conclusions the writer does. We do not make the same reading*'...Allen writes that his information came from Los Angeles police officers, and particularly the intelligence division of the Police Department.

'*We have investigated to determine whom he may have talked to*' Reddin said. '*It was nobody in a position of authority---not I, the intelligence captain nor the former police chief (the late William H. Parker).*'

Reddin conceded the writer may have talked to '*someone at the working level*'. But Captain Harold E. Yarnell, Jr., head of the intelligence division, said an investigation failed to turn up any officer to whom the writer had talked. '*If we had such information, we wouldn't talk to a writer*' Yarnell pointed out. Yarnell said the article '*attempts to recite some history we believe is not based on fact*', and then attempts to recite a major plot in the making. '*It is not our position that the August 1965 riot was Communist-inspired*' he said. '*We have never been able to isolate any group as being the motivating forces or manipulators*'. ...

Said Yarnell: '*We haven't been able to establish that any organization had anything to do with it. Three or four groups wanted to take credit. But when someone seriously became interested in talking to them about it, they backed down. I'm sure the Communist Party is gleefully watching every bit of dissension. But they haven't gone out in front*'.

The article specifically mentions reports that during the rioting, men wearing red armbands and speaking through bullhorns gave directions to the mobs. Yarnell said thorough investigation has failed to substantiate such reports.

The article also claims the rioters used stolen loot to build up an arsenal of weapons to be employed in the forthcoming major Communist revolution. '*The only arsenals we've found have been those of paramilitary right-*

wing groups' Yarnell said.

Furthermore, the 12/65 McCone Commission Report on the Watts riot concluded that no outside agents were responsible for the riot.

<http://www.usc.edu/libraries/archives/cityinstress/mccone/contents.html>

Specifically:

"After a thorough examination, the Commission has concluded that there is no reliable evidence of outside leadership or pre-established plans for the rioting. The testimony of law enforcement agencies and their respective intelligence officers supports this conclusion. The Attorney General, the District Attorney, and the Los Angeles police have all reached the conclusion that there is no evidence of a pre-plan or a pre-established central direction of the rioting activities. This finding was submitted to the Grand Jury by the District Attorney."

LOS ANGELES FBI FIELD OFFICE FILE

"COMMUNISM IN RACIAL MATTERS"

The FBI's Los Angeles field office file entitled "*Communism in Racial Matters*" contains the following pertinent details and observations:

J. Edgar Hoover to Los Angeles Special-Agent-in-Charge

"Concerning the rioting which has been taking place in a Negro section of Los Angeles the past two days, by return airtel...advise whether or not there have been any indications of subversive involvement. You should also canvas informants in the security field to determine whether or not any subversives are involved and what the attitude is of subversive groups relative to these riots." [Los Angeles file 100-66078, serial #305 (8/13/65 airtel J. Edgar Hoover to SAC Los Angeles)]

Los Angeles Reply to Hoover

"Close contact has been maintained with informants in the security field, particularly those who are in the Communist Party (CP) since the outset of the rioting which started on the night of 8/11/65, and to date, there is no indication of subversive involvement or direction in the rioting or that the CP intends to participate in any way."

"[Name deleted] advised on 8/13/65, that at a meeting of section organizers, Southern California District Communist Party (SCDCP) held on the evening of 8/13/65, [name deleted] SCDCP, instructed those present to stay away from the riot area and that the SCDCP would take no action until things had calmed down, at which time "they" would know how to proceed. Two Negro CP members present at this meeting were specifically instructed

by [name deleted] to stay out of the riot area."

"Close contact has been maintained with [name deleted], a CP member who lives in the Watts area, where the rioting is centered and this informant knows of no CP involvement in the rioting and has received no instructions from the CP."

"[Name deleted], a CP Club in the Moranda Smith Section, SCDGP, has been in continuous daily contact since the rioting began. This informant has personally been in the riot areas and mingled with the rioters and has furnished information about the intentions of some of the rioters which has been promptly passed on to the Los Angeles Police Department and interested military agencies. This informant has stated that there has been no domination, direction, or involvement by the CP in the rioting. [Name deleted] a long-time CP functionary who belongs to a CP section covering part of the area of the rioting and who is employed in the general vicinity of the riot area, has been alerted since the outset of the rioting and this informant knows of no domination, direction or involvement by the CP in the rioting."

"[Name deleted - but identified as security informant], advised on the night of 8/13/65, that the Muslim leadership in Los Angeles has issued instructions to their membership not to get involved in the rioting and to keep out of trouble..."

"Racial sources have been contacted concerning the rioting and none of them have any information that the CP is involved in any way in the rioting." [Los Angeles 100-66078, #366 (8/14/65 airtel SAC Los Angeles to J. Edgar Hoover.)]

Los Angeles 100-66078, #387 (8/27/65 SAC Los Angeles to J. Edgar Hoover) summarizes "*reliable*" informant report of 8/24/65 concerning a meeting of the Southern California District Communist Party leadership:

"[Name deleted] also advised on 8/24/65 that at a meeting of the SCDGP Negro Commission held on 8/18/65, the Los Angeles riots were discussed and it was agreed that with the attitude of the Los Angeles Police Department following the riots there would probably be a bigger flare up in the near future. [Name deleted] said that the riots which were of a class nature rather than a race nature were not channeled in any way but were spontaneous. After the first two days, however, a number of gangs moved in and it became obvious that the local criminal element had taken over..." ...

"Los Angeles has canvassed logical CI, PCI, PSI and SI's concerning this matter. These sources had no additional information which would indicate that subversives were involved in the recent Los Angeles riots." [The abbreviations refer to various categories of informants used by the FBI.]

"Los Angeles has no additional pertinent information concerning the involvement of subversive elements in the riots in Watts and South Los Angeles during the period August 11-15, 1965. A canvass of logical criminal and security informants and racial sources has been completed and no additional information has been obtained." [Los Angeles 100-66078, #390 (9/6/65 SAC Los Angeles to J. Edgar Hoover.)]

With respect to the larger issue raised by Gary Allen and the JBS - namely the extent and scope of CPUSA involvement within civil rights organizations in the Los Angeles area, the following

lengthy February 1965 FBI-Los Angeles report provides pertinent details and I quote from it:

FBI Los Angeles file 100-66078, serial #88, 2/3/65

Pg 5: Discusses 10/5/64 meeting of Communist Party West Adams Club of Moranda Smith Section. The club discussed recent speech by "Henry Winston, a national functionary of the CPUSA...The club noted that the affair was poorly attended by Negroes and discussion was had on why it was impossible to get Negroes to attend affairs sponsored by the CP. No one could offer an acceptable reason, but the consensus was that the CP was not attractive to the Negro and did not present a program which could help the civil rights struggle as much as the present day Negro organizations and churches."

Pg 7: "The sources who are familiar with CP plans and activities on all levels of the Southern California District of the Communist Party (SCDCP) in the Los Angeles area, advised that for a number of years to the present time the SCDCP has on numerous occasions at all levels of the organization discussed the racial situation in the general Los Angeles area and has put forward proposals, made resolutions and/or suggested plans of action."

Pg 8: "However, none of these plans have been put into effect and at top level meetings of the SCDCP in recent months the district leaders have frankly admitted that the District and the CPUSA in general have been unable to provide any leadership and have been generally ineffective in the civil rights struggle and the Negro freedom movement. These leaders further recognize that the SCDCP and the CPUSA are still without any effective plan that may be implemented to gain for the CP a leadership position in the movement."

(Informant name deleted but described as someone "*in her position within the SCDCP*") "also advised that the SCDCP has very little influence as an organization on the civil rights movement...The recent success according to (name deleted) of the SCDCP in recruiting young people into the CP has not extended to members of the Negro race, with a few exceptions, and this is due primarily to the fact that the appeal of the CP program has been to young intellectuals and there are but few Negroes in this category who find any merit in CP theory."

Pg 16 on NAACP: "The Los Angeles Branch, NAACP, is the dominant and most active branch of the NAACP in the southern California area. The SCDCP has no current program to infiltrate or attempt to gain domination of the Los Angeles Branch, NAACP. (Informant name deleted) further informed that the SCDCP has no current program to infiltrate or attempt to gain domination of any other NAACP branch in the Southern California area."

Incidentally, in the summer of 1961, the Los Angeles FBI office reported on the makeup of the Communist Party in the southern California District:

"An analysis of the composition of the general membership of the Southern California District to date indicates there are 50 negroes who are current active CP members, regularly attending CP meetings and generally contributing to the programs of the CP. Of these, 22 are informants of the Los Angeles office." [Los Angeles file 100-54554, serial #780; 7/3/61 SAC Los Angeles to J. Edgar Hoover.]

Overall, the FBI had 433 live informants within the Communist Party USA. [HQ 67-149000-1-161x3x1; 11/30/1960 Inspection Report on Domestic Intelligence Division, by John F. Malone, page 4; copy of report in personnel file of Assistant Director, Alan H. Belmont.]

JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY ON A. PHILIP RANDOLPH

The Birch Society's evaluation of African American labor leader A. Philip Randolph's career may be gleaned from its lengthy litany of Randolph's alleged "*affiliations*" with organizations and causes which the JBS describes as "*subversive and Communist*" or "*Communist front*".

Randolph is but one of about 1200 people and organizations discussed in a 4-volume book series which the Birch Society published under the title *Biographical Dictionary of the Left*.

The concluding sentence of the JBS summary about Randolph epitomizes the manner in which the JBS slimes the reputation and character of people through malicious and sinister innuendo:

"Randolph learned his lessons well as he rubbed elbows with Communists over the past three decades." [Francis X. Gannon, *Biographical Dictionary of the Left, Volume 1*, page 488; Western Islands Publishers, 1969]

By contrast, I will now present extensive excerpts from the FBI HQ file on Randolph.

The following quotations come from the FBI's 198-page "*correlation summary*" document about Randolph. This is serial #46, dated 1/12/65, of Randolph's main file which is HQ file #100-55616. A "*correlation summary*" consists of excerpts from all FBI files which mention a subject and it then identifies the specific file number, serial number and date along with a synopsis of the content.

In the following excerpts, "CP" or "CPUSA" refers to **Communist Party** in the United States. The "*Daily Worker*" is the Communist Party USA newspaper. "NALC" refers to Negro American Labor Council, an organization which A. Philip Randolph created. Much of the data contained in the FBI's file on Randolph came from its informants inside the CPUSA who often attended secret, closed CP meetings.

Page 78:

"[CP informant name excised] advised on 10/20/50, that it was the direct order of the CP that the Harlem Trade Union Council was organized. The organization was set up to counteract the anti-communist labor group in Harlem organized by A. Philip Randolph and Frank R. Crosswaith which was known as the Negro Labor Committee."

"The DW [*Daily Worker*] dated 11/14/50, carried an article by John Pittman, captioned '*Right To Chose Your Friends*'. This article stated that Negro mis-leaders such as Willard Townsend, A. Philip Randolph. Roy Wilkins of the NAACP, and Gloster B. Curren of the NAACP, by joining the anti-communist pack and attempting to impose the loyalty program on the Negro people, bore direct responsibility for every case where a Negro worker was deprived of his livelihood on the pretense of '*disloyalty*'."

Page 114:

[CP informant name excised] advised that on 7/29/62, Irving Potash met in Chicago with a group of CP persons in industry and the Negro American Labor Council [NALC] at Chicago. Potash pointed out that in New York certain CP members were expelled from the NALC...As a result, A. Philip Randolph had called for removal of all communists from the NALC...There was also a move within 3 or 4 branches of the NALC to have Randolph removed as head of the organization, and the CP supported this move. Chicago, Cleveland, NY, Buffalo, and California branches of the NALC would secede if Randolph persisted in removing the communists."

Page 120:

"The following references in the file captioned 'CPUSA' contain information pertaining to the activities of A. Philip Randolph. Randolph was founder of the MOWM [March on Washington Movement], the NALC [Negro American Labor Council] and was active in the struggle for a permanent Fair Employment Practices Act, and the fight against segregation in the Armed Forces. The CP, although in favor of civil rights for Negroes, attacked Randolph and accused him of being a 'Trotskyite' because Randolph was extremely anti-communist and refused to allow them in his organizations. The CP attempted to infiltrate the NALC and the MOWM."

Page 135:

"The following references in the file captioned the '*Harlem Trade Union Council*' which later became the National Negro Labor Council (NNLC), file #100-367632, contain information pertaining to the activities of A. Philip Randolph. The NNLC was organized by the Communist Party to counteract the anti-communist group in Harlem headed by Randolph and Frank A. Crosswaith. This anti-communist group, the Negro Labor Committee, issued a press release signed by Randolph and others which denounced the NNLC."

Page 143:

"The following references pertain to the activities of A. Philip Randolph with the March on Washington Movement. The MOWM was founded by Randolph as an anti-communist group that split off from the NNC [National Negro Congress] in the Fall of 1940. The group planned on a March on Washington in order to present grievances of the Negro to Government officials and for the abolishment of discrimination. In June 1941, Randolph called off a March on Washington at the request of Government officials but the organization set up was retained."

Page 151:

"The following references in the file captioned *National Negro Congress*, file 61-6728, contain information pertaining to the activities of A. Philip Randolph, an officer of this organization. Randolph was one of the founders of the NNC and became its first President. He resigned in 1940 as President because of the communist influence that had become apparent in the NNC."

Page 154:

"The following references in the file captioned 'Racon' [Racial Conditions] file #100-135, contain information pertaining to the activities of A. Philip Randolph in the struggle for Negro rights...Randolph was bitterly anti-communist and the communists attack him repeatedly for his red-baiting. He had organized the NNC in 1936 and resigned in 1940 when CP influence became noticeable."

Page 164A:

"The following references in file 62-101087 pertain to Segregation...He [Randolph] met with President Eisenhower and other Negro leaders in June 1958 to discuss school integration problems and on 3/22/60 he addressed the New York Youth Committee For Integration. At this meeting he told the group that the communists had infiltrated the organization and that they should dissolve it. They followed his advice and dissolved the organization."

Page 170:

"The following references in the file captioned '*Cominfil of the Railroad Industry*', file #100-348159, contain information pertaining to the activities of A. Philip Randolph. Randolph, President of the BOSCP [Brotherhood of Sleeping Car Porters], had been associated with (either as a member of, or sponsor of), various CP fronts until 1940 when he quit the NNC [National Negro Congress] because of CP influence in the organization. He was considered very anti-communist and was attacked by the CP for his stand on communism. The CP tried to infiltrate the NALC [Negro American Labor Council], but failed because Randolph controlled it completely. The President of the Dining Car and Railroad Food Workers Union, an alleged CP member, also attacked Randolph because of an award he had presented to AFL President William Green for his fight against discrimination."

Page 177-178:

"The following references are newspaper clippings of or quotations from articles which were written by A. Philip Randolph:

"Communists: A Menace To Black America" in The Northwest Enterprise, Seattle WA, 11/26/46

"The Menace of Communism" in The American Federationist, March 1949, p19

Page 184:

"The following references on A. Philip Randolph pertain to his activities in connection with FEPC [Fair Employment Practices Committee] legislation. From 1943 to 1952 he traveled to various sections of the U.S. speaking to groups and organizations urging them to support FEPC legislation and to write their Congressmen and Senators to enlist their support. He founded the National Council For a Permanent FEPC. Randolph was attacked by the CP as an enemy because of his popularity with the Negroes and because he refused to work with the CP."

Randolph's FBI HQ file [100-55616] also contains a memo dated 10/18/63 (no serial number), which is a copy of a New York City FBI memo concerning Communist infiltration of the NAACP.

This memo is a summary prepared by the Special Agent in Charge of the FBI's New York City field office for FBI Director J. Edgar Hoover concerning data in New York City FBI files on A. Philip Randolph—most of which came from FBI informants who attended secret closed CPUSA meetings.

Although this memo appears in the HQ file on Randolph [100-55616] it originated in the HQ and NYC files on the NAACP [HQ 61-3176, and NYC 100-7629, sub D].

Excerpts from the NYC summary are quoted below:

Page 1:

"On page 122 of the *Guide To Subversive Organizations and Publications*, revised and published as of December 1, 1961, prepared and released by the Committee on Un-American Activities, U.S. House of Representatives, Washington DC, there appears in part the following concerning National Negro Congress:

'A. Philip Randolph, President of the Congress since its inception in 1936, refused to run again in April 1940 on the grounds that it was 'deliberately packed with Communists and Congress of Industrial Organizations members who were either Communists or sympathizers with Communists.'

Page 2:

"The July 19, 1943 issue of the *Daily Worker*, page 3, column 6, contains an article entitled '*A. Philip Randolph Waves The Whole Redherring*'. According to the article, Randolph stated that persons were barred from the March on Washington because '*We don't want Communists in the organization.*' "

"In the July 16, 1948 edition of the *New York Times*, there appears an article which reflects that A. Philip Randolph accused American Communists of having used the fight against racial discrimination as a device to advance the cause of Russia."

"On April 22, 1959, a second source advised that James Jackson, CPUSA Secretary in charge of Southern and Negro affairs, stated on April 22, 1959, that he and other top CP functionaries had concluded that the CP was defeating its own purpose in aiding the Youth March For Integrated Schools, which was held on April 18, 1959 at Washington DC. In doing so, the CP was providing A. Philip Randolph with the opportunity of planting seeds of Fascism in the youth groups. Jackson described Randolph as a dangerous capitalist agent and the most outspoken anti-Party personality in the Negro movement." ...

Page 3:

"On November 23, 1959, a fifth source advised that the District Convention of the Illinois District of the Communist Party was held on November 21 and 22, 1959 in Chicago. Claude Lightfoot on November 21, 1959, cautioned against CP support of the Negro organization then being organized by Randolph. He stated that Randolph had a history of being anti-Communist, however, he was not above wanting to use the CP."

Page 4:

"On June 13, 1960, an eighth source advised that a meeting of all trade union members of the CP, along with the Negro Commission and Youth Commission of the Baltimore CP, was held on June 8, 1960 in Baltimore, Maryland. George Meyers stated at this meeting that Randolph had been a militant fighter all his professional life and had been red baiting most of the time."

"On July 19, 1960, a tenth source advised that a meeting of the Illinois State Committee of the CP was held on July 8, 1960 in Chicago at which a report was given by Claude Lightfoot on a recent convention of the NAACP held in Minneapolis MN. Lightfoot reported that Randolph gave the keynote speech at the convention banquet and that there was complete lack of '*red-baiting*' until Randolph spoke. He stated that Randolph felt it was his duty to oppose Communism."

Page 5:

"On April 27, 1961, the sixth source advised that a meeting of the CP Caucus of the NALC [Negro American Labor Council] was held on April 21, 1961 in New York City at which William L. Patterson was invited to discuss the CP's role in the NALC. Patterson pointed out that the CP had four of its members on the Executive Board of the New York chapter NALC and another four members serving on various committees...Patterson stated he believed the Party would have to move slowly as it can only be effective if it did not attract the attention of Randolph and this other individual."

Page 6:

"On April 18, 1962, a fifteenth source advised that a press release was issued on April 18, 1962 by Randolph when it was determined that there was Communist infiltration and domination of the Buffalo Chapter, NALC. The release stated in part:

'The leadership of NALC is fully aware of the fact that Negro workers can never win their central objective, namely, the abolition of second-class status in the labor movement and in industry, except within the framework of freedom and democracy, and hence, consider Communists and Communism as the kiss of death.'

Randolph stated finally that he would rather not have a chapter of NALC in Buffalo than one under Communist control."

Page 15:

Summarizes testimony of ex-Communist Louis Rosser which he gave during Hearings of the House Committee on Un-American Activities in San Francisco, 12/1/53. During his testimony, Rosser explained the CPUSA position on Randolph during World War II, particularly in relation to Randolph's activities in support of a Fair Employment Practices Committee. This data may also be seen in the 1954 report of the House Committee on Un-American Activities entitled *"The American Negro in the Communist Party"*, page 29.

"The Communist Party said that he [Randolph] had to be muzzled, and he was coming to Los Angeles in 1942, and I and Pettis Perry were given the job of working out a plan how we could discredit Randolph...So he was getting a medal that the NAACP gives each year to some outstanding American Negro, white, or any nationality in the field of human relations, and he was getting it for his work on integration of Negroes into industry...We wrote a speech that praised the Soviet Union, that called for the opening of the second front and that said Randolph was a traitor to his country...But it [the speech] gave the Party not only the opportunity to discredit this Negro leader, but it gave the Party the opportunity to reach the top negroes in America with the program of the Communist Party at that time." [The speech was delivered by Charlotta Bass, whom Rosser described as a CPUSA *fellow-traveler* "*who already was close to the Communists*".]

J. EDGAR HOOVER and FBI ON CIVIL RIGHTS MOVEMENT

In 1965, J. Edgar Hoover described the civil rights movement as "a great and too long neglected

cause of human rights" in our country. [*FBI Law Enforcement Bulletin*, Introduction, April 1965].

After warning about radicals that had no genuine interest in advancing civil rights, Hoover observed in a December 1964 speech, that:

"Let me emphasize that the American civil rights movement is **not**, and has **never been** dominated by the communists--because the overwhelming majority of civil rights leaders in this country, both Negro and white, have recognized and rejected communism as a menace to the freedoms of all."

[J. Edgar Hoover speech, 12/12/64, *Our Heritage of Greatness*, pg 7 - Hoover speech before Pennsylvania Society and the Society of Pennsylvania Women; **bold** emphasis on "not" and "never" in original document].

In November 1966, Hoover received an inquiry from a self-identified JBS member who saw the above quote in a letter-to-the-editor of his local newspaper and he wanted to know if the quote was an accurate reflection of Hoover's judgment both in 1964 and 1966. Hoover replied affirmatively and concluded: "**This position remains essentially unchanged today.**" [HQ 62-104401-3021, 11/15/66 Hoover reply to incoming Bircher inquiry].

Also see following Hoover comments :

"It would be absurd to suggest that the aspirations of Negroes for equality are communist inspired. This is demonstrably not true..." [J. Edgar Hoover speech, *Faith In Freedom*, 12/4/63, page 6].

"In general, legitimate civil rights organizations have been successful in excluding Communists, although a few have received covert counseling from them and have even accepted them as members...The CP is not satisfied with this situation and is continually striving to infiltrate the civil rights movement at every level. " [J. Edgar Hoover, *U.S. News and World Report*, 11/1/65, page 46].

"It is no secret that one of the bitterest disappointments to communistic efforts in this Nation has been their failure to lure our Negro citizens into the party. Despite every type of propaganda boomed at our Nation's Negro citizens, they have never succumbed to the party's saccharine promises of a Communist 'Utopia'. This generation and generations to come for many years owe a tremendous debt to our Negro citizens who have consistently refused to surrender their freedoms for the tyranny of communism." J. Edgar Hoover testimony before U.S. Senate Internal Security Subcommittee, 01/17/60, reprinted in March 1960 *FBI Law Enforcement Bulletin*, page 7]

As these comments make clear, Hoover and the FBI saw Communists as **OUTSIDERS** seeking ways to exert influence and control within the civil rights movement whereas the JBS portrayed them as **INSIDERS** who created and controlled the movement from the beginning.

Martin Luther King Jr. Attending a "Communist Training School"

See expanded version of this topic at: <https://sites.google.com/site/ernie124102/hfs-1>

The Birch Society and its front-organization TACT (Truth About Civil Turmoil) were responsible for widespread distribution of a postcard showing a photo of Dr. Martin Luther King Jr. "[attending a Communist training school](#)." In addition to postcards, Birchers also were responsible for billboards which contained the photo and for hundreds of instances when JBS speakers referred to King's attendance at a "[Communist training school](#)." The school was identified as Highlander Folk School (HFS) in Monteagle, TN.

Alan Stang discusses HFS and the photograph in his JBS-published book where he described Highlander as "[this Communist school](#)". [*It's Very Simple: The True Story of Civil Rights*; Western Islands Publishers, 1965, page 114)

What the Birch Society is very careful to suppress is the story behind who took the picture and the background of the persons responsible for describing HFS as a "[Communist training school](#)"

The famous photograph of Dr. King at Highlander was taken by Edwin H. Friend. Mr. Friend of Atlanta GA described himself as "[an undercover agent](#)" for the Georgia Commission on Education (GCE). He also was an official photographer for the Georgia Ku Klux Klan headed by Grand Dragon Calvin F. Craig.

The GCE was organized in 1953. The most prominent Commission members were Georgia Governor Marvin Griffin, Georgia Lt. Gov Ernest Vandiver, and Roy V. Harris.

MARVIN GRIFFIN was a life-long segregationist and co-founder of the States Rights Council of Georgia. The Council was an organization, like the GCE itself, that was devoted to preventing integration in Georgia. Toward that end, Governor Griffin was a welcomed featured speaker at White Citizens Councils and States Rights Council functions.

In a May 1956 speech, Governor Griffin made the following observations:

"Let me say to you tonight as we counsel together, do not be concerned by what is said by the Communists, the pinkos, the radicals, the NAACP, the ADA, the one-worlders and all that motley group of crackpots who are clamoring for desegregation and mongrelization. These groups of organized minorities are chanting a chorus that opposition to the fraudulent order of the Supreme Court is defiance of law. Of course, that is not true. The decision of May 17, 1954 is not law. It is an attempt to make law where none existed before by a non law-making body." ...

"You may take the map of the world today and look at all of the countries. Wherever you find a country that is

populated by a black race, a colored race, or a mongrel race, the Christian religion has not been able to survive...I say without fear of contradiction, that the white race is the only race of people in history who have been able to perpetuate the Christian religion. Mongrelization of our people here in America will follow integration of the races in school and on the social level. When mongrelization of the races occurs---and God grant that it will never occur--it will bring with it the destruction of the Christian religion." ...

"There are obvious and well-known differences between whites and blacks which no amount of glossing-over and covering up by subversive so-called anthropologists and pseudo-scientists can hide...There are many reasons why the white people object to their children having this close association with nigger children. Among them are: health; the Nigra's high crime rate and disrespect for law; the lower mentality level; and the high rate of illegitimacy among Nigras." ...

"I would like to, for just a moment, if you please, tell you very briefly what we are attempting to do in our State of Georgia. First, in Georgia, the Constitution and the laws of our state prevent the expenditure of state tax funds for the operation of mixed schools. Also, our General Assembly will never appropriate one dime for mixed schools. And let me say to you definitely and unequivocally, Georgia will have separate public schools or no public schools." [Transcript of May 1956 Griffin speech before Southern Regional Citizens' Council of New Orleans, pages 3-4.]

ERNEST VANDIVER was elected Governor of Georgia in 1958. His campaign platform included this statement: "When I am your Governor, neither my three children, nor any child of yours, will ever attend a racially mixed school in the State of Georgia. No, not one."

ROY V. HARRIS published the *Augusta GA Courier*, a white supremacist weekly paper. He was National President of the Association of Citizens' Councils of America, a white supremacy organization as well as President of the segregationist Georgia States' Rights Council.

EDWIN H. FRIEND attended a 1957 Labor Day weekend seminar at HFS and took a picture of a group of individuals seated in an auditorium, one of whom was Dr. King.

When the GCE published its pamphlet on Highlander, it described the HFS seminar as being "held to discuss methods and tactics for precipitating racial strife and disturbances." [HQ 61-7511, #206 is copy of GCE publication, *Highlander Folk School: Communist Training School—Monteagle TN.*]

Subsequently, Edwin Friend testified before a Tennessee legislative hearing concerning what he "learned" during his "investigation" of Highlander. The excerpt appearing below, reveals his underlying motivation and the basis for describing HFS as "Communist".

"Q: Mr. Friend, was that a subversive meeting there at that time?

A: It was subversive, sir, to the way that I have been taught to live in America.

Q: Explain that to the committee.

A: I have been taught by southern tradition to keep the races separate. I was taught to go to Sunday school and Church. I was taught to respect the other fellow's habitat, and that is what I have always tried to do. Up here it seems like all of those things weren't even considered. It is the primary motive of this group to tear down the forces that were trying to keep the races separate in the South."

[Joint Legislative Investigating Committee, State of Tennessee: *Investigation of Highlander Folk School, Grundy County Tennessee*, 3/4/59, p447.]

Mr. Friend was asked another question which produced a revealing answer:

"Q. Do you believe that anyone that espouses the things that you have just said to promote integration for that kind of motive, could possibly be a good Tennessean, a good Southerner, or a good American?"

A. I can guarantee you he is not what I would call a good American, Sir." [Ibid, p451]

Mr. Friend also testified about one of his photos which revealed another matter at Highlander that greatly disturbed him: **square dancing!**

"This is a square dance held at night in one of the buildings on this estate of Mr. Horton...The approach to this square dance seemed to be very harmless, in that you get a person in the square dance and the caller can call it in such a way that the Negro boy will wind up dancing with the white girl...This was called and invariably he always wound up with one of the Negro boys dancing with one of the white girls in order to get them familiar, and these doctrines were taught in this school, and in order to break down the resistance to integration in that you had to do it anyway that a person really wouldn't be conscious of it..." [Ibid, page 443.]

Aside from the candid description of his bias cited above, Mr. Friend is also on record in a deposition submitted in November 1959 for Tennessee court proceedings. Friend said that his assignment as a Georgia "undercover agent" was "to go to Monteagle, Tennessee to the Highlander Folk School and find out whether that malignancy of the NAACP and Communism was leaking out over Georgia." [John Edgerton, *The Trial of the Highlander Folk School*, Southern Exposure magazine, Spring 1978, p 86.]

In short, like the Birch Society itself, Ed Friend (the "investigator") started with a conclusion and then was only interested in evidence if it conformed or could be twisted toward his pre-determined conclusion.

In 1957, the FBI responded to an inquiry about Highlander from Tennessee State Senator R.L. Peters Jr.

The notation on the Bureau file copy states:

"The Bureau has known of the Highlander Folk School for years and has investigated numerous allegations

concerning its activities. While it permits Communists to attend, there has been no indication that it teaches courses along the Communist line or has ever employed any Communists on its staff. It is primarily designed to teach economics and related subjects." [HQ 61-7511-212, 11/12/57].

A July 1963 FBI memo summarizes their file on Highlander Folk School:

"Due to the interracial character of the School, it has been the subject of numerous allegations that it represented the headquarters of communism in east Tennessee. An extensive investigation was conducted in 1941 and 1942 as a result of the allegations. These allegations have never been substantiated and much of the information of a subversive derogatory nature concerning this School was later repudiated by the individuals who previously furnished the information...This organization has continuously been involved in the integration movement and as a result charges are being continuously made that it is 'communist'. These charges are based mainly on the opinion of the individuals making the charges that being pro-integration is being pro-communist." [64-7511-286, July 26, 1963, F.J. Baumgardner to W.C. Sullivan].

In 1963, Mississippi Governor Ross Barnett testified before the U.S. Senate Commerce Committee against a proposed public accommodations bill. Governor Barnett raised the issue of Dr. King's attendance at HFS. An FBI memo on the controversy concludes:

"FBI files concerning the HFS show that this school was the subject of a security investigation which was closed in 1943...No information was developed that the school offered courses of instruction on communism nor that the Communist Party ever succeeded in gaining control of the school. Due to its interracial character, however, the HFS has been the subject of numerous past allegations that it represents the headquarters for communism in eastern Tennessee." [July 13, 1963 FBI memo from J.F. Bland to W.C. Sullivan].

In May 1961, Martin Luther King's attendance at Highlander's 1957 event was discussed in an internal FBI memo which produced blistering comments (and censure letters) by J. Edgar Hoover to members of the Bureau's Name Check Section -- the unit which prepared summary memoranda for high government officials. On May 22, 1961, FBI summaries were sent to the Attorney General on five individuals -- one of whom was MLK Jr. The summary memo on King stated that King had "[attended a Communist Party training school seminar](#)".

J. Edgar Hoover asked for an explanation of why the summary memo had stated that King had not been the subject of a security investigation if, as the summary memo stated, he attended a Communist Party school. The subsequent explanation produced the following explanation by the Supervisor of the Name Check Unit, George H. Scatterday:

"Reverend King has established himself as of one the most vocal and nationally prominent leaders on behalf of integration for the Negroes. In his efforts along these lines he has accepted financial contributions from all types of organizations, including groups cited as subversive; lent support to left-wing causes; and has associated with representatives of cited organizations and Communist Party members. This activity, however, has apparently been in the furtherance of his integrationist aims. There is no evidence that he has ever been affiliated with the Communist Party...The synopsis of referenced memorandum contained the statement concerning MLK Jr., that in 1957 he attended a Communist Party training school seminar and reportedly gave a closing speech. The Director

[Hoover] has asked 'Let me have more details.' "

The foregoing brief statement did not convey the full facts concerning the nature of the meeting attended by King. In our efforts to be brief we did not put in sufficient detail. We should have indicated that the term '*Communist Party training school*' was a descriptive term which had been utilized by the Georgia Commission on Education to describe the Highlander Folk School, Monteagle, Tennessee, where the seminar was held and was not a characterization of the specific meeting attended by King...A review of the Bureau file concerning the Highlander Folk School reveals that a security investigation on the school was closed in 1943...No information has been received that the school has offered courses of instruction in communism, nor has information been received that the Communist Party ever succeeded in gaining control of the school. Due to its interracial character, however, it has been the subject of numerous past allegations that it represents the headquarters for communism in Eastern Tennessee." [HQ 67-318195, #210, 5/23/61 memo from G.H. Scatterday to A. Rosen -- copy in Scatterday's personnel file.]

J. Edgar Hoover handwrote two comments on this memo:

(1) With respect to the original memo's characterization that King "*attended a Communist Party school seminar*", Hoover observed: "*This is the understatement of the year. You deliberately made an erroneous statement of fact.*"

(2) With respect to the description of Highlander originating with the Georgia Commission on Education, Hoover observed: "*This is astounding. Upon what the first memo said, I orally advised A.G. [Attorney General] that King had been associated with Communists and had been at a Communist meeting.*"

Hoover then approved a recommendation on the memo that Section Chief Scatterday should receive a letter of censure because his summary memoranda and synopsis regarding King "*did not accurately set forth*" the correct details regarding King's attendance at the Highlander event.

At this point, Hoover did not know that the description of Highlander which was published by the Georgia Commission on Education in its pamphlet on Highlander, actually originated with Edwin H. Friend, the official photographer of the Georgia KKK!

Chapter 7

FBI VS. JBS ON PERSONS JBS CONSIDERED "EXPERTS"

Debating a John Birch Society (JBS) member or sympathizer can be very difficult because, to inflate their credentials as an organization relying upon carefully documented and factual material, the JBS often cites as "experts" persons who testified, under oath, before state or national legislative committees as well as persons who had some connection to the FBI (either as former Special Agents or as security informants) or persons who were informants for local police departments.

Some of these folks became JBS members, endorsers, speakers, or authors and they lent an aura of

authority and special "*inside knowledge*" to JBS assertions.

Since the Birch Society purports to be an "[educational](#)" organization and "[an army fighting with facts](#)", "[whose only weapon is the truth](#)" it seems appropriate to consider new data, available for the first time, which originates from sources that, heretofore, even the Birch Society accepted as knowledgeable, authoritative, and reliable---such as the FBI during J. Edgar Hoover's tenure.

FBI INFORMANTS, SPECIAL AGENTS, and THE BIRCH SOCIETY

The FBI had very negative evaluations about the post-FBI endeavors of its former security informants or Special Agents or Police Department informants who subsequently attached themselves to the JBS as members, endorsers, speakers, or authors. Examples include: Dan Smoot, W. Cleon Skousen, Julia Brown, David Gumaer, Gerald W. Kirk, Matt Cvetic, and Karl Prussion.

In an FBI memo dated January 21, 1964, the Bureau proclaimed that...

["As a matter of fact, the Bureau will not approve any individual for development as a confidential informant if he is a member of the John Birch Society."](#) [HQ 62-104401-2027, 1/21/64 memo to Mr. Callahan from (name excised)].

The memo also points out that ["No information is available to indicate membership of any Bureau employee in the JBS."](#) This was based upon employee submission of annual "*Personnel Status Forms*" which required them to list organizations to which they belonged.

It is also clear from Bureau internal memos that a JBS member would not be considered desirable as a prospective FBI employee. Wire service reports in December 1966 quoted Hoover as stating no JBS members were employed by the Bureau. A Birch Society member wrote to Hoover to challenge ["the veracity of that statement"](#) and he questioned why JBS membership would even be a concern. Hoover's 12/22/66 reply re-iterated that ["no Special Agents of the FBI are members of the John Birch Society."](#)

Many Birchers conflated FBI informants with FBI Special Agents and they assumed there was no qualitative difference between the two categories and this mistaken judgment continues today.

Informants supply raw information. Raw information can be fragmentary, ambiguous, contradictory, exaggerated, deceptive or false -- which is why it has to be analyzed, evaluated, interpreted, weighed, and compared to other data including data from other informants.

Nevertheless, many "FBI informants" subsequently became paid speakers and earned a lucrative living from claiming special expertise that they did not actually possess or expertise which was

limited in time, place, and scope.

The FBI frequently used the description "*professional anti-Communists*" to characterize persons and organizations whom exploited the genuine concerns of ordinary citizens about Communism primarily to generate income for themselves but (from the Bureau's perspective) without much regard for the accuracy of information they disseminated.

The FBI's list of such persons and organizations included the following who were associated with, endorsers of, or who were recommended by, the JBS:

Billy James Hargis (Christian Crusade), Edgar Bundy (Church League of America), Fred Schwarz (Christian Anti-Communism Crusade), Dan Smoot (former FBI Special Agent and later publisher of *Dan Smoot Report*) and Karl Prussion (former FBI security informant.)

As reports came into the Bureau of statements made by former FBI security informants or Special Agents (such as Dan Smoot, W. Cleon Skousen, Julia Brown, Karl Prussion, and Gerald Kirk)---it became apparent that these folks were presenting their **PERSONAL** opinions which were not supported by data in FBI files or from FBI investigations and thus contradicted conclusions reached by the Bureau from its investigations.

During a February 1967 appearance before the House Appropriations Committee, J. Edgar Hoover was asked if he approved of former FBI security informants speaking under the auspices of "*extremist groups*" such as the JBS-front group TACT (Truth About Civil Turmoil).

Hoover accepted the premise that TACT was an extremist group and he then said:

"It is an improper attempt to capitalize on the name of the FBI."

Congressman Andrews then asked:

"In other words, this certainly does not indicate what it would to the average American, that the '*ex-FBI undercover agents*' are so frustrated in their work in the Agency that they leave and sign-up with extremist organizations in order to try to protect America."

Hoover replied: "*Nor does it indicate I in any way condone the use of the name 'ex-FBI-undercover agent' in such endeavors.*" [HQ 62-104401-3135, 5/31/67].

Hoover objected to former informants seeking to inflate their credentials to persuade audiences that they had some sort of special expertise when, in reality, they simply provided raw information, of varying quality, to the Bureau.

JBS National Public Relations Director Reed Benson wrote to Hoover on 11/30/67 to ask Hoover to clarify his objection. Benson mentioned that JBS publicity releases on JBS speakers included descriptions of their association with the FBI. Examples: Julia Brown was described as former "FBI Undercover Agent" and Lola Belle Holmes and Ruth Gordienko were described as "an FBI undercover operative".

Hoover's terse reply to Benson was that "it is improper for individuals who have voluntarily furnished information to the FBI on a confidential basis, for which they may or may not have been compensated, to capitalize on the name and reputation of this Bureau." [HQ 62-104401, #3215; 11/30/67 Reed Benson letter and 12/5/67 Hoover reply.]

Many FBI memos make clear that former FBI informants would often speak on matters about which they had no knowledge OR where their knowledge was limited to a specific place or time frame. But organizations such as the JBS rarely bothered to determine what, exactly, such persons did or did not know i.e. the extent or limits of their expertise.

DAN SMOOT, a former FBI Special Agent, is a unique star in the Birch Society stable of "experts". However, from the Bureau's perspective, Smoot's post-FBI endeavors wrongly sought to capitalize upon his relatively brief FBI career. The Bureau thought Smoot was in the habit of making "unfactual and inaccurate statements...concerning national and international problems."

A detailed 20-page report about Smoot may be seen here:

<https://sites.google.com/site/ernie124102/smoot>

In early 1964, the Bureau sent Dr. Harry Overstreet material to assist him and his wife with their forthcoming book entitled "*The Strange Tactics of Extremism*." One chapter of the book discussed Dan Smoot. When the Overstreets furnished advance excerpts of the book to the Bureau in the summer of 1964, the Bureau's Domestic Intelligence Division reviewed the highly critical excerpts and concluded:

"The material from the Bureau's point of view appears to be satisfactory...The material has been reviewed and checked previously by the Domestic Intelligence Division. From our point of view there does not appear to be anything objectionable."

FBI Assistant Director C.D. DeLoach handwrote the following observation on the review memo about the Overstreet's chapter on Dan Smoot: "I'm glad they're doing this. It's about time someone called his hand." [HQ 62-1-2576, unrecorded, 7/23/64 memo from M.A. Jones to Mr. DeLoach]

According to Bureau memos, shortly before his retirement Smoot was the subject of disciplinary action. One memo has the following summary:

"Howard D. Smoot was employed with the Bureau as an Agent from March 23, 1942 to June 15, 1951. Shortly before Smoot's resignation, he was censured, placed on probation, and transferred due to several unfounded charges against his SAC [Special Agent in Charge of a Field Office]. His attitude before and after resignation was extremely antagonistic, and he was not recommended for re-instatement."

[HQ 62-102576, unrecorded, 8/30/61 memo from N.P. Callahan to The Director; also see HQ 62-102576-#1, 9/13/55]

With respect to Smoot's knowledge of communism and communist activities, it isn't clear how much FBI experience Smoot actually had. Smoot's 1993 autobiography states that he was assigned to the "communist squad" in Cleveland for 3 years but speaking engagements and training "took up much of my time during the remaining months of my tenure in the Cleveland office (and) gave me considerable relief from Communist duty..." [Dan Smoot: *People Along The Way*, Tyler Press, 1993, page 162].

From Cleveland, Smoot transferred to Bureau HQ in Washington DC and became a desk supervisor for CIA applicants which he described as "doing clerks work on Agents salaries". [Ibid, page 166.]

Subsequently he was transferred to the Bureau's Crime Records Section "where I served as a ghost writer of magazine articles, newspaper guest columns, prefaces, patriotic endorsements and speeches for J. Edgar Hoover." [Ibid, page 169]. Then he transferred back to Dallas for 31 months concentrating on "police schools and special assignments" but he worked on only 2 cases---neither of which was assigned to him. Shortly thereafter he resigned. [Ibid, page 177].

In May 1962, J. Edgar Hoover responded to an inquiry about Smoot's FBI background by stating:

"I welcome this opportunity to make it perfectly clear that former Special Agents of the FBI are not necessarily experts on communism. Some of them have sought to capitalize on their former employment with this Bureau for the purpose of establishing themselves as such authorities. I am firmly convinced there are too many self-styled experts on communism, without valid credentials and without any access whatsoever to classified, factual data, who are engaging in rumor mongering and hurling false and wholly unsubstantiated allegations against people whose views differ from their own. Such activity makes more difficult the task of the professional investigator." [HQ 62-102576-107, May 23, 1962 Hoover reply to incoming inquiry about Smoot]

In 1994 I wrote to Mr. Smoot to inquire about several matters, including the circumstances of his resignation from the FBI. His reply does not correspond to the data contained in his FBI personnel file.

For example: Smoot denied that he had ever been subject to disciplinary action at the end of his

service, and he denied being placed on probation. However, his personnel file shows that he initialed a performance evaluation which explicitly mentions the disciplinary action and his probationary status. In addition, J. Edgar Hoover's letter of censure was mailed to him at the FBI Dallas office.

Mr. Smoot refused to reply to my inquiry concerning whether or not he had access to (and saw) FBI HQ summary memos, reports, or monographs concerning the "*Communist Party and the Negro*". Like the Birch Society, Smoot claimed the civil rights movement was Communist created and controlled and served only Communist purposes—but the Bureau's internal reports do not reflect such conclusions--so, again, this seems to be merely his personal speculation which is not substantiated by Bureau investigations and informant reports.

W. CLEON SKOUSEN: A November 1965 FBI memo discusses a JBS advertisement which lists several persons, including Skousen, who endorsed the JBS. Skousen, a former FBI Special Agent, is described in the FBI memo as someone "[who has exploited his former Bureau career for personal gain.](#)" [HQ 62-104401-unrecorded, 11/16/65 memo from name-deleted to W.C. Sullivan].

Another source of Bureau irritation about Skousen was biographical material he distributed in which he described himself as a "[top aide](#)" to Hoover or as an "[Administrative Assistant to J. Edgar Hoover.](#)" He was neither.

In October 1961, the Bureau sent out replies to several inquiries about Skousen and stated that "[there is no position in the FBI entitled Administrative Assistant to J. Edgar Hoover.](#)" [HQ 62-104401-1448, 10/4/61 Hoover reply to inquiry]. (Former FBI Special Agent Dan Smoot also used this title in his biographical sketches.) Some Skousen admirers described him as "[third in the chain of command](#)" within the FBI which is also false.

Birch Society "experts" often could not get simple data about themselves correct. See Karl Prussion, David Gumaer, and Julia Brown below for more examples.

See the following 33-page report (revised September 2009) for a detailed discussion of Cleon Skousen's FBI career and the mythology about it:

<https://sites.google.com/site/ernie124102/skousen>

An October 1964 FBI internal memo discusses whether or not the Bureau should acknowledge receipt of an article written by Skousen about J. Edgar Hoover which was published in the September 1964 issue of the Birch Society magazine, *American Opinion*:

"The activities of Skousen are well known to the Bureau...In recent years he has been aligned closely with the extreme right-wing such as the John Birch Society and has been characterized as an *'unprincipled racketeer in anticommunism'* who is *'money-mad'* and who is doing everything and anything to exploit the subject of anticommunism. Bureau files reveal Skousen has always been a strong supporter of the Bureau and the Director; however, he has not hesitated to trade on his former association with the Bureau in order to achieve stature as a writer and lecturer on anticommunism. In view of this, it is not felt we should acknowledge his favorable comments about Mr. Hoover." [HQ 62-104401-2280, 10/8/64 memo from M.A. Jones to C. DeLoach.]

Almost all of Skousen's performance evaluations while in the FBI rate him as *"excellent"* and, at one time, he was discussed by senior FBI officials as someone who might be considered for promotion to Assistant Special Agent in Charge of a field office.

However, from the time he entered the FBI (as a clerk and messenger in 1935) through his retirement in 1951 -- his assignments were primarily administrative not investigative!

Skousen served as a Supervisor in the Communication Section (training new employees, writing manuals for switchboard operators, etc.) He also was responsible for the teletype section plus he edited two internal FBI employee publications.

As late as 1944 there is a memo by J. Edgar Hoover chastising Skousen for problems in the Mail Review and Dispatch Unit which was under Skousen's supervision.

While assigned to the Crime Records Section at FBI HQ, Skousen was a speaker before various community groups where he discussed FBI jurisdiction, crime-fighting techniques, juvenile delinquency matters and he conducted tours of FBI HQ for VIP's. He also spent considerable time preparing and presenting material for police training schools. However, most of his performance evaluations discuss his NON-investigative assignments and responsibilities.

The investigative experience shown in his file was limited to a brief period in April 1944 when he worked temporarily in the Washington DC field office and dealt with *"white slave traffic"*, *"impersonation"*, *"theft of government property"* and *"bank robbery"* cases.

In April 1945, Skousen transferred from Washington DC to the FBI's Los Angeles field office for health reasons (stomach ulcers). His duties in Los Angeles were described as primarily liaison with local police departments, selective service investigations, juvenile delinquency-related matters, and assignment *"to a special squad dealing with black market activities."*

KARL PRUSSION

Karl Prussion claimed to have been lured into the CPUSA in 1933 by his professors at Wayne State University in Michigan.

However, when the FBI interviewed Prussion in February 1942, in Michigan, he denied ever being a Communist Party member, but he did acknowledge fomenting strikes and unrest at auto plants in Michigan.

Then, in 1949, Prussion told San Francisco FBI agents that he had been a Communist Party member during 1942.

Then, in June 1964, Prussion contacted the FBI in Los Angeles. He stated that he was an active member of the Communist Party from 1933-1938.

In his publications and during his speeches around the country, Prussion claimed to have been a CPUSA member for "26 years" --- but "for 12 years" of that time he claimed to have been an "FBI counterspy" - which, by subtraction, leaves 14 years when he supposedly was a CPUSA member by his own choice --- versus his claim to the FBI in 1964 that he only was a member from 1933-1938 (5 years).

In February 1959, Prussion appeared disguised as "*Mister X*" on the Tom Duggan TV program (KCOP-TV, Channel 13, Los Angeles). During his interview, Prussion made the following observations about the Communist Party [CP] in California.

"I would say that the 2000 members of the CP in California are members who attend Party meetings, that is, they belong to clubs; they are people who work in an organized manner. However, there are many more than 2000 members throughout the State of California - I would say four times or five times as many - who are what they call individual Communists who are using their knowledge of Communist methods and techniques, Communist strategy, who work strictly on their own, and they figure their own methods of operation within many organizations which they try to get to work for the best interests of the CP and the Soviet Union." [Transcript of Tom Duggan interview of Karl Prussion ("Mr. X") on 2/26/59, page 3.]

Thus, in total, Prussion claimed that there were between 10,000-12,000 Communists and Communist sympathizers living in California in early 1959.

Prussion's speculation regarding the number of Communists in California and nationwide dramatically changed depending upon which audience he spoke to.

A brief recap:

2/26/59 = According to Prussion, 2000 CPUSA members in California plus 4-5 times as many sympathizers who advanced the interests of the CPUSA.

10/23/62 = During a speech at a Rossmoor, CA school, Prussion said "there are 36,000 hard core Communists in the United States, half of them in California." [Long Beach CA Independent, 12/24/62, p1B: "Counterspy Raps Mosk Statements". So, according to Prussion, the number of "Communists" in California increased 900% from 1959 to 1962!

11/14/63 = Prussion said there were 45,000 Communists in the U.S. during a speech to the South Bay Club of Federated Republican Women in Redondo Beach CA. [South Bay Daily Breeze, Redondo Beach CA, 11/15/63, page 19, "Reds Pose Big Internal Danger"]

Unlike Prussion, the FBI had access to CPUSA membership statistics because of two very highly placed moles inside the CPUSA with access to CPUSA headquarters documents in New York City (Morris and Jack Childs).

The FBI also had copies of CPUSA mailing lists, their dues payments records, and other pertinent primary source documents.

PRUSSION VERSUS FBI -- SUMMARY

1959:

Prussion = 2000 CP members in California plus about 8,000-10,000 more sympathizers working to advance CPUSA interests, for a total of 10,000-12,000 in California.

FBI = According to the FBI Security Index, the correct total number of Communists and Communist sympathizers in California (combining the stats of the 4 FBI field offices covering the State), was **3300**. [HQ 100-358086, serial #2603, Security Index stats from 4/12/59 Report].

Put in a different context, Prussion's estimate of 10,000-12,000 in California alone, actually approximates the correct total for the entire country according to the FBI Security Index Monthly Report for February 1959. **The national total was 11,107!** [HQ 100-358086-2585, 2/20/59].

The correct total number of CPUSA members in California, as of 9/30/59, was **1143** (411 in Northern California, and 732 in southern California) according to semi-annual membership statistical report by FBI. The total membership in the United States as of 9/30/59 was **5766**. [NY 100-80638, #1654, 9/30/59 summary chart of CPUSA membership by state, by Communist Party District, and by FBI field divisions.]

1962:

Prussion = 36,000 hardcore Communists in the United States and 18,000 in California alone.

FBI = 5164 in the U.S. and 989 in California - See FBI chart below [New York file 100-80638, serial #1933, page 1, 3/31/62 summary of CPUSA membership by state, by FBI field division, and by Communist Party districts.]

The chart is a table titled "COMMUNIST PARTY OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA" and "The following figures are not yet corrected to show net membership, field divisions and Communist Party districts." It lists membership numbers for various states and districts. The states listed are: Alaska, Arizona, Arkansas, California, Colorado, Connecticut, Delaware, Florida, Georgia, Idaho, Illinois, Indiana, Iowa, Kansas, Kentucky, Louisiana, Maine, Maryland, Massachusetts, Michigan, Minnesota, Missouri, Montana, Nebraska, Nevada, New Hampshire, New Jersey, New Mexico, New York, North Carolina, North Dakota, Ohio, Oklahoma, Oregon, Pennsylvania, Rhode Island, South Carolina, South Dakota, Tennessee, Texas, Utah, Vermont, Virginia, Washington, West Virginia, Wisconsin, and Wyoming. The districts listed are: District 1, District 2, District 3, District 4, District 5, District 6, District 7, District 8, District 9, District 10, District 11, District 12, District 13, District 14, District 15, District 16, District 17, District 18, District 19, District 20, District 21, District 22, District 23, District 24, District 25, District 26, District 27, District 28, District 29, District 30, District 31, District 32, District 33, District 34, District 35, District 36, District 37, District 38, District 39, District 40, District 41, District 42, District 43, District 44, District 45, District 46, District 47, District 48, District 49, District 50, District 51, District 52, District 53, District 54, District 55, District 56, District 57, District 58, District 59, District 60, District 61, District 62, District 63, District 64, District 65, District 66, District 67, District 68, District 69, District 70, District 71, District 72, District 73, District 74, District 75, District 76, District 77, District 78, District 79, District 80, District 81, District 82, District 83, District 84, District 85, District 86, District 87, District 88, District 89, District 90, District 91, District 92, District 93, District 94, District 95, District 96, District 97, District 98, District 99, District 100. The membership numbers are listed in the right column of the table.

1963:

Prussion = 45,000 CP members in the United States.

FBI = The reality, according to the FBI, is that there were about 4453 CP members in the U.S. as of August 1963.

KARL PRUSSION and the BIRCH SOCIETY

In a September 1962 interview, Karl Prussion answered questions concerning his evaluation of Robert Welch and the Birch Society:

"I have spoken at many of their chapter meetings" and "I have great respect for Mr. Welch" and "Well, as I say, I think the man is building an organization which is a credit to the United States and really, Tom, I think if it weren't for such organizations, the United States would be in a much more critical condition today than it is." [Transcript of 9/10/62 Tom Duggan interview of Prussion, Channel 11, KTTV—Los Angeles, pages 10 and 15]

In a 1965 Racine WI speech sponsored by Racine Patriots, Prussion said JBS "has my respect, and I'm grateful to them as the type of conservative organization that can develop in America and save our country." [Racine Journal Times, 5/11/65, "Ex-Communist Assails Reuther As Greatest Problem For U.S."]

In December 1959, John Birch Society founder, Robert Welch, wrote to J. Edgar Hoover about the

background of Karl Prussion because Welch was considering hiring Prussion.

Welch stated that Prussion told him (Welch) that he worked as an informant for the FBI for 12 years. In a 9/28/63 affidavit that Prussion signed "[under oath and penalty of perjury](#)", Prussion claimed he was an "*FBI counterspy*" for 12 years beginning in 1947 and ending in 1960.

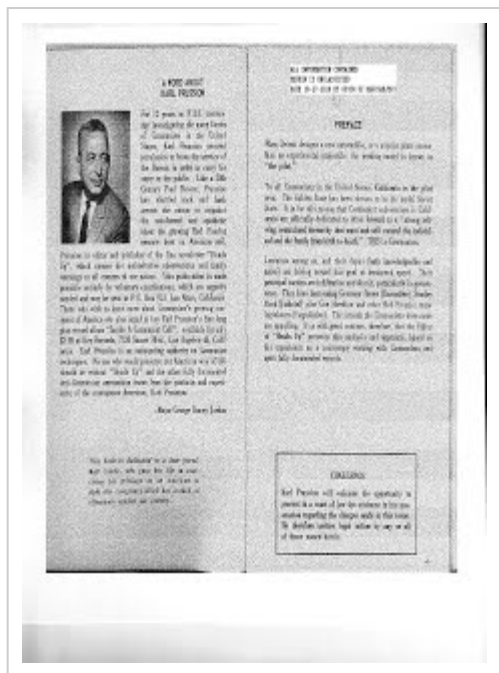
By contrast, J. Edgar Hoover's reply to Robert Welch stated that Prussion was an informant for less than 9 years (November 1949 to July 1958). [HQ 62-104401, #27, 12/1/59 letter from Welch to Hoover and 12/8/59 Hoover reply].

A February 1959 message to J. Edgar Hoover from the Special-Agent-In-Charge of the FBI's San Francisco Field Office summarized their judgment about Prussion:

["The Agent handling this informant has noted that Prussion does not have a good memory for names, dates and places and it is his opinion that Prussion would not be inclined to make an effective witness because of this feeling."](#) [HQ 61-9152-#73, 2/10/59 from SAC San Francisco to J. Edgar Hoover]

In a 33-page Prussion publication in 1962 entitled "*California Dynasty of Communism*", the foreword by George Racey Jordan declared that:

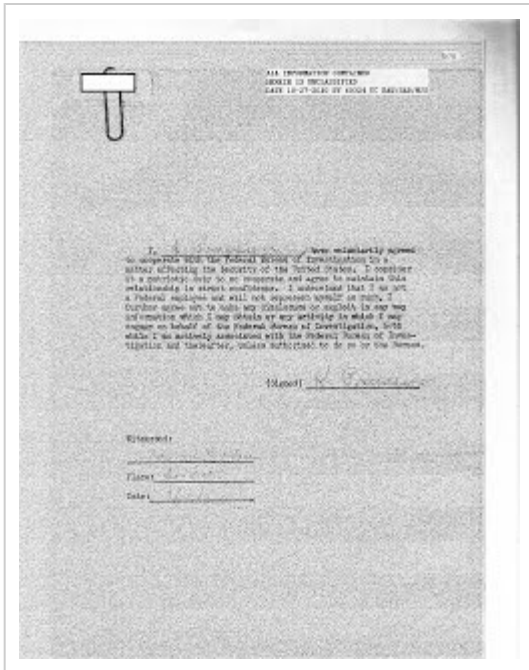
["...Karl Prussion secured permission to leave the service of the Bureau in order to carry his story to the public."](#)



The reality is starkly different.

Prussion never requested or secured permission from the FBI ["to carry his story to the](#)

public". Instead, in July 1958, Prussion was abruptly terminated as an informant by the FBI because he publicly disclosed his status to a newspaper reporter, even though he promised, in writing, never to do so without prior Bureau approval. [His 3/10/53 non-disclosure affidavit appears below].



Prussion was frequently described by the FBI as "a professional anti-communist". His entire income depended upon his ability to entice audiences to pay to attend his speeches around the country and then subscribe to his self-published newsletter, *Heads Up*.

In another blow to his credibility, a January 1964 California Appeals Court decision discussed Prussion's testimony in a case where he appeared as an "*expert witness*".

See: RITA JUDD MACK et al., Plaintiffs and Appellants, v. THE STATE BOARD OF EDUCATION, Defendant and Respondent. Court of Appeals of California, First District, Division Two, Docket No. 20828, January 28, 1964.

"The board now agrees with petitioners that 'the witness Karl Prussion is an unreliable witness and that his testimony be eliminated from consideration by the court in deciding this case.' "

Prussion attempted suicide in December 1965, claiming that he was a target for assassination by Communists. Local psychiatrists diagnosed Prussion as mentally ill and subject to paranoia. [Sacramento FBI file 157-1993, serial #2, 6/3/71].

MATT CVETIC was an endorser of the JBS whose book, *The Big Lie*, was recommended by the JBS. Cvetic was a chronic alcoholic who was dropped as an informant by the Bureau for various indiscretions. While initially useful in several court cases, Cvetic's handlers at the FBI and Dept. of Justice ultimately concluded he was "unreliable", "dishonest" and "neurotic". J. Edgar Hoover

advised subordinates that it would be "most unfortunate" to utilize Cvetic in future court proceedings.

[For a complete account of Cvetic's anti-Communist career, see Daniel J. Leab's book: *I Was A Communist For The FBI—The Unhappy Life and Times of Matt Cvetic*, Pennsylvania State University Press, 2000]. Professor Leab acquired FBI and Dept of Justice files on Cvetic and interviewed numerous associates of Cvetic.

DAVID GUMAER infiltrated Students For A Democratic Society and W.E.B. DuBois Clubs and was an undercover operative for the Chicago Police Department. Gumaer joined the JBS in 1964 and subsequently gave speeches under the auspices of American Opinion Speakers Bureau. He was also a Contributing Editor to the JBS weekly magazine, *Review of the News*.

In 1970, the FBI's Savannah GA office forwarded a copy of a flyer to HQ which advertised a 9/16/70 speech by Gumaer under JBS auspices. The flyer described Gumaer as an undercover operative for police intelligence and also stated that "His services were also called upon by the FBI and Committees of both Houses of the U.S. Congress." Upon learning about this false description of his association with the FBI, HQ directed its Chicago field office to contact Gumaer "and advise him to cease and desist from making statements that his services have been requested by the FBI." [HQ 62-113743, #1, Hoover to SAC Chicago, 9/18/70].

Subsequently, in October, FBI HQ instructed its Los Angeles field office to contact Gumaer to again demand he stop referring to himself as being associated with the FBI.

The quality of Gumaer's analytical skills may be assessed from his speech in Norfolk VA in December 1970 where he predicted that "a dictatorship will be in control of the United States by 1972...Rioting will start on campuses and ghettos. Communications will be cut off and the stock market will go broke. The people will call for law and order in the streets. Martial law will be declared and we will have a dictatorship. The wave of assassinations and kidnappings will begin before that." Furthermore, according to Gumaer, "The Conspiracy is ahead of schedule. By 1973 it will take over unless we can expose the full scope of it before then." [HQ 62-113743, unrecorded, 12/11/70 article in *Norfolk VA Ledger-Star* by Larry Bonko.]

During a February 1971 speaking engagement in Reno NV under the auspices of the JBS front-group, Support Your Local Police, Gumaer again stated that he had been an informant for the FBI. FBI HQ instructed its San Francisco field office to immediately contact Gumaer "and once again admonish him for referring to the FBI in his speech in Reno and direct him to immediately cease and desist from making any further reference to the FBI in his talks." [HQ 62-113742-10, M.A. Jones to Mr. Bishop]. During his Reno speech, Gumaer announced his personal choices for President and Vice-President as George Wallace and Lester Maddox.

In October 1973, the FBI's Washington DC Field Office sent a memo to HQ advising that it had been contacted by "a confidential source who has provided reliable information in the past" and this informant advised that Gumaer "is alleged to be organizing right-wing airlines pilots to fly 'hit teams' around the United States to assassinate certain individuals. Henry Kissinger, Secretary of State, was the only name mentioned." The field office described Gumaer as "a right-wing anti-Semitic extremist." The informant was further described as someone who "has on numerous occasions provided information on security matters which has been analyzed to be 95 percent accurate." [HQ 62-113743-16, 10/26/73; SAC WFO to Hoover].

In November 1973 an informant told the FBI Dallas Field Office that he met Gumaer in Maryland during a March 1972 JBS-sponsored speaking tour. Significantly, the informant is identified as a fellow-Bircher who also was a paid speaker under the auspices of the JBS Speakers Bureau! He was employed by a public relations firm in Dallas that promoted conservative politicians.

Gumaer was described by this informant as "a nut and a crook". The informant stated that Gumaer had misused a passport secured through his employment with Congressman John Schmitz (Birch Society National Council member) "for the purpose of smuggling gold into the U.S. and this offense allegedly led to Gumaer being fired." The informant also stated that Gumaer had stolen an electric typewriter from Schmitz's office. [Dallas 62-4577, #14 and #15 which are 11/5/73 teletype from SAC Dallas to Hoover and 11/7/73 Dallas Special Agent report on discussion with informant].

In January 1967 Gumaer was convicted on charges of battery and subsequently received one year probation. In May 1976 he was convicted of filing a false tax exemption certificate and served 30 days with 2 years probation. [Phoenix FBI file 100A-8715, SubG6, #2, 8/26/85].

In October 1984 FBI HQ authorized a full field investigation of Gumaer and during November 1985 Gumaer was under FBI surveillance because of his association with Arizona Patriots (AP).

An FBI HQ summary memo on Gumaer contains the following comments:

"A review of Bureau indices determined numerous references for Dave Emerson Gumaer. A review of Bureau file 62-113743 determined that Gumaer, who was never an FBI employee or an FBI informant, is allegedly a right-wing, anti-Semitic extremist. Gumaer was an undercover operative of the Chicago Police Department in the 1960's being directed against 'new left' organizations. He came to the attention of the Bureau in 1970-1971, when he undertook a multi-state speaking engagement on behalf of the John Birch Society, of which he was a member. During these speeches, wherein Gumaer would indicate his prior undercover activities and relationship with the Chicago Police Department, Gumaer also identified himself as an FBI informant working matters of a similar nature for the Bureau. These speeches were generally of an alarmist nature, intended to arouse the wrath of conservative America to the ever growing threat from 'new left' and 'Communist backed' movements in the U.S. Considerable correspondence

was received at FBIHQ, due to Gumaer's purporting to be an FBI informant, in addition to his inflammatory rhetoric during these speeches." [Phoenix 196B-1603, #42 = 4/30/85 airtel from J. Edgar Hoover to SAC Phoenix, pages 1-2]

The Phoenix FBI field office files on Gumaer also reported:

"Subject is presently a member of the Arizona Patriots organization. He is employed by American Federal Bullion and Coin Inc...Will conduct a very loose surveillance of subject...Subject should be considered armed and dangerous." [Phoenix 100A-8715, Sub G6, #8, 11/7/85 Special Agent Report to Special Agent in Charge, Phoenix FBI office]

Another serial describes Arizona Patriots as follows: "The Arizona Patriots are an anti-tax, neo-Nazi, paramilitary organization whose philosophy resembles the Aryan Nations, Posse Comitatus, and other right-wing extremist groups to advocate the armed revolution and the overthrow of the United States Government. The actual size of AP is unknown, but leaders claim to have more than 4000 individuals who are members or sympathizers, among these being current and retired members of law enforcement and the military." [Phoenix 100A-8715, Sub G6, serial #55, 9/26/85]

In December 1986, Gumaer was arrested by BATF and FBI agents in Phoenix.

"On 12/17/86, Federal Grand Jury, Denver CO, returned indictment against Stephen Christiansen and Gumaer for violation of Title 26, U.S. Code Section 5861(e) and Title 18, U.S. Code Section 2" - which pertain to illegal weapons transfers.

Christiansen, a co-worker of Gumaer at Western Monetary Consultants in Denver, Colorado, had told Gumaer about Uzi machine guns he had for sale:

"According to transcripts of secretly taped conversations by an FBI informant in the Arizona Patriots case, Gumaer attended some meetings of the fringe group, which planned to rob an armored truck leaving a Laughlin NV casino and bomb a Phoenix synagogue and the IRS center in Ogden UT...Gumaer mentioned to the undercover informant, a former Sheriff's Deputy who infiltrated the Arizona Patriots in 1984, that he knew a man in Colorado who could sell them eight Uzis. The informant...passed the information to federal agents who then used Gumaer to set up the sale." [Phoenix 100A-8715, Sub G6, #84 and #86, Phoenix to SAC Denver, 1/26/87 and Rocky Mountain News, 2/24/87, page 13]

JULIA BROWN

A CASE STUDY OF A JBS "EXPERT"

(FBI HQ file 100-382107 and Cleveland 134-19 and Cleveland 66-35, sub 264)

Also see the following reports for additional details concerning Julia's false assertions regarding our civil rights movement:

Dan Smoot report: <http://ernie1241.googlepages.com/smoot>

Highlander Folk School report: <http://ernie1241.googlepages.com/hfs-1>

In the summer of 1960 Julia Brown expressed the desire to be released from her role as an FBI informant due to the strain on her health and her desire to restore the confidence of her friends and relatives who had no idea of her FBI informant status.

The Special-Agent-In-Charge (SAC) of the FBI's Los Angeles office sent an inquiry to the SAC of the Cleveland office to inquire about Julia Brown. Julia had recently moved from Cleveland to Los Angeles. Cleveland SAC's reply was:

"It would appear that while she may be somewhat concerned about her reputation among her friends and relatives, this factor did not seem to be of much concern to her in the past. Former (Julia's FBI code name deleted) gave the impression of being financially ambitious, and now may feel that she can capitalize on her experience in the Communist Party to her financial advantage, and for the prestige she may believe such publicity will afford her." [Los Angeles file (no number provided), serial #A-12, SAC Cleveland to SAC Los Angeles, 8/17/50.]

It was also the SAC Cleveland's judgment that Julia, with only a 10th grade education, was not intelligent enough to write for publication, as she originally proposed. [Los Angeles file, (no number provided), serial A-21, SAC Cleveland to J. Edgar Hoover, 10/7/60.]

In her 1966 book "*I Testify: My Years As An FBI Undercover Agent*" published by the Birch Society (which actually was ghost-written by Carleton Young), Julia gives a fictitious account of her marital history as well as false details concerning joining and leaving the Communist Party. Other details in the book are also wrong.

According to Julia, she married her first husband (Edward Harris) while she was a teenager but he died. [Julia Brown, *I Testify: My Years As An Undercover Agent For The FBI*, Western Islands Publishers, 1966, page 11]

Her next mention of marriage is many years later to Curlee Brown of Cleveland. In reality, however, Julia divorced Edward Harris, then married Jack Latimer and divorced him, then married Fred Brice and divorced him the same year she married him, and then married Curlee Brown but considered divorcing him as well.

When Carleton Young submitted two chapters of *"I Testify"* to Julia for review, she initially rejected the material. Julia told the Los Angeles FBI field office that Mr. Young was expressing his personal political views rather than her views and she characterized Young as an adherent of the "lunatic right" which she described as "Birchers".

[For "lunatic right" comment, see Los Angeles file (no number provided), serial #A-129, SAC Los Angeles to J. Edgar Hoover, 8/8/63 and for Julia's reference to "Birchers" see serial #A-119, SAC Los Angeles to J. Edgar Hoover, 3/28/63.]

Julia's opinions about the civil rights movement, and prominent persons and organizations within it, underwent a stunning reversal after she associated herself with the Birch Society as a paid speaker.

In a March 1961 magazine interview, Julia stated that Communists had "little or no influence" within the NAACP and she concluded that:

"I'm 100 percent with the NAACP and I think they are doing a wonderful job. Top government officials are aware that the NAACP is legal and is working in the American way for first class citizenship for all Americans." [Ebony magazine, "I Was A Spy For The FBI", March 1961, p102].

Ebony magazine also reported that during her interview, Julia stated that:

"The extent of Communist penetration among Negroes is sometimes exaggerated by well-meaning but uninformed persons. She disagrees with former President Truman who was quoted as saying the sit-in movement was Communist-inspired. Mrs. Brown, who attended state and national Party conventions says: 'The sit-in movement was not Communist-inspired, but the Communists have tried to infiltrate it. Truman was wrong. The Communists would have never inspired a movement based on passive resistance. They don't believe in that. They don't do anything that's decent. But after it started, they tried to jump on the bandwagon.' " [Ebony magazine, "I Was a Spy For the FBI, March 1961, p96]

FBI Headquarters received an advance copy of Julia's *Ebony* magazine interview which it reviewed for errors. In a January 16, 1961 FBI memo, the Bureau stated that Julia should limit her comments to what she personally observed and experienced in Cleveland because "she is not qualified to assert herself as a spokesman for what is happening in the CP across the country."

Among Julia's errors discussed in the Bureau's review memo were:

- the number of "Negroes" Julia claimed were in the Communist Party
- her claim that the Communist Party was sending young members to school to become ministers which the Bureau described as an "isolated" example rather than common practice, and,

· *Julia's claim that Communists used white women as sex bait to lure blacks into the Party, which the Bureau thought was false. [HQ 100-382107-70, M.A. Jones to C. DeLoach, 1/16/61].*

In another magazine interview, Julia said: "I don't think the Communists have appeal to Negroes. I feel that American Negroes are awakened to the menace of Communism." [Sepia magazine, "Communist For The FBI", 09/62, p12]

However, **AFTER** associating herself as a paid speaker for the Birch Society, Julia claimed that the NAACP was "badly infiltrated" by Communists and she routinely denounced the NAACP during her JBS-sponsored speeches as representative of the problem of Communist infiltration of the civil rights movement.

As one example of Julia's comments about NAACP, Julia was the featured speaker at a JBS-sponsored event, Truth About Civil Turmoil (TACT) in Spokane WA in 1967. The local newspaper article observed: "Mrs. Brown said there is no civil rights movement, but there is a Communist revolution 'using the Negro to attain this end. If you can't see this, you are stark blind'." And: "Mrs. Brown disclosed names and organizations in describing the Communist infiltration. Among them was the NAACP." ["Communist Infiltration Said Heavy", October 10, 1967, Spokane WA Spokesman-Review, p6 in FBI-Seattle file 100-24754, serial #290]

I have been unable to find any Birch Society speaker who ever had anything favorable or pleasant to say about the NAACP (after they became paid JBS speakers or authors).

In December 1963, a JBS member wrote a letter to J. Edgar Hoover to inquire if Hoover agreed with statements attributed to Attorney General Robert Kennedy about insignificant Communist infiltration of the civil rights movement. The Bircher asked: "Certainly you must be aware of the high degree of Communist infiltration into the NAACP, CORE, etc.?" [HQ 62-104401, #1981, 12/5/63 letter to Hoover.]

About a month later, the Bureau received another letter which observed:

"I have just attended a meeting where two members of the John Birch Society spoke. They said the NAACP is run by Communists, all of the top people are Communist and Mrs. Elanore (sic) Roosevelt belongs to 30 Communist fronts over the last 23 years."

Julia served as "Honorary Chairman" of the JBS-front group in Cleveland called TACTIC (Truth About Civil Turmoil In Cleveland). In August 1966, TACTIC sent a request to FBI HQ asking permission to reprint a Bureau poster entitled "What YOU Can Do To Fight Communism".

Normally, the Bureau routinely approved such requests or even sent hundreds of copies to requesters. However, in this case, the Bureau produced an "*in-absence*" reply. In-absence replies were used as a means of distancing the FBI from a person or group perceived as repugnant and not deserving a response with a signature by J. Edgar Hoover. Hoover's secretary (Helen Gandy) signed in-absence replies. Gandy's response to TACTIC was curt: "[as a matter of policy, he \[Hoover\] would prefer you not reprint the poster...](#)"

Julia's past services to the Bureau were no longer considered deserving of either a direct Hoover reply with his signature nor permission to reprint a poster. [HQ 62-104401-2938, incoming 8/17/66 inquiry to J. Edgar Hoover and Gandy reply]

Here is the FBI's official description of Julia Brown in response to an April 1965 inquiry about her status:

["Concerning Mrs. Julia Brown, she furnished information on subversive activities to the FBI on a confidential basis from 1951 to 1960. Although she was not an employee of this Bureau, she was compensated for her services. Her current views are strictly her own and do not represent the FBI in any way."](#) [HQ 62-104401-2499, 4/24/65]

During her FBI informant period Julia was paid varying amounts on a monthly basis for her services plus actual expenses. Those payments commenced in August 1951. For the month of July 1954, Julia received \$175 for services and \$31 in expenses - which was a fairly typical month until November 1956 when her monthly services payment increased to \$190. In January 1957, her monthly payment increased to \$225 but then fluctuated to amounts between \$90 and \$225 during her final three years as an FBI informant.

Significantly, Julia made considerably more money (monthly and annually) as a paid speaker for the Birch Society (usually \$100 per speech) than she ever made working as an informant for the FBI.

In November 1966 an attorney contacted the FBI about a reference by Julia in her book, *I Testify*, to a person Julia cited as a "[founding member](#)" of the Communist Party. The attorney represented the person Julia identified and he disputed Julia's description. A Bureau memo concluded that:

["It appears probable that the name \(deleted for privacy\)...is a misprint and that the person intended to be mentioned was actually \(name deleted for privacy\)."](#)

By all accounts, during her service as an informant for the FBI, Julia was quite effective and provided valuable information. One Cleveland memo to FBI HQ has the following summary:

["Information Furnished Of Unusual Value: The twelve page 'Report of the Ohio State Board to the State Committee' dated November 11, 1956, furnished by informant, was not received from any other source in the Cleveland Division. Informant's information re CP funds, CP infiltration of NAACP, and CP Organization in the Cedar-Central](#)

Section is not duplicated by any other informant of this division. Information furnished by [Julia's code name deleted] has been of considerable value in relation to a technical source close to an Ohio CP functionary." [HQ 100-382017, #44; 1/14/57 SAC Cleveland to J. Edgar Hoover.]

One wonders, however, what accounts for Julia's association with the JBS given her pre-JBS favorable recollections of persons and organizations which the JBS despised.

Another puzzle concerns a major discrepancy between Julia's public accounts in her book and speeches about how she came to join the Communist Party (CP) versus what she told the FBI when she first contacted them in December 1950 and, again, during an extensive interview in June 1951.

According to Julia's December 1950 statement to the FBI, she was approached by a Communist Party member in the summer of 1947 requesting her permission to place a poster about the CP candidate for City Council on her front porch. She then became interested in local politics and she attended political rallies. Subsequently, she was visited by Frieda Katz, the Communist Party's Cuyahoga OH County Organization Secretary and Julia was invited to several CP social functions.

Then, around Christmas 1947 Julia signed an application for membership in the Communist Party while at Katz's home. She paid her 50 cent dues and received Communist Party literature. She then attended a number of Party meetings including one in the spring of 1948 where Gus Hall was the principal speaker. [FBI HQ file 100-382107, #1, SAC Cleveland report to J. Edgar Hoover, 6/27/51.]

"She stated that a regular membership card for the CP had been issued to her, but that she had destroyed it after she decided to leave the Party in the summer of 1948". [Cleveland 66-35, Sub 264, #2; 6/27/51 SAC Cleveland to J. Edgar Hoover, page 1, re: "Mrs. Julia Forston Brown nee Julia Forston aka Mrs Curlee Brown, Mrs. Edward Harris, Mrs. Jack Latimer, Mrs. Fred Brice".]

In June 1951, the Cleveland FBI field office again interviewed Julia and a Special Agent prepared a summary memorandum for the Special Agent in Charge of the Cleveland field office. The pertinent portion is quoted below.

Julia's story concerning how she became a Communist Party member is worth recounting in detail because it illustrates how many decent and patriotic Americans were seduced into supporting political candidates, organizations, and causes which they later rejected or which they later discovered were Communist-inspired and controlled.

The Birch Society rarely, if ever, acknowledges the legitimate concerns or the serious and genuine social/economic problems which made people like Julia Brown receptive to Communist propaganda.

Instead, the Birch Society (and extreme rightists in general) attempt to de-legitimize and demonize anyone connected to organizations which they describe as “*Communist*” or “*Communist front*”.

In the JBS scheme of things, if person “x” supposedly joined such an organization---the mere fact that their name appears as a member or endorser on a letterhead or on a petition or in a newspaper ad, etc. tells you everything you need to know about the character, loyalty, patriotism, and intelligence of that individual. [Note: Communists often added the names of prominent persons from their communities to Communist-sponsored petitions or Communist-front publications without the knowledge or approval of those persons --- just to create the impression of support from such respected and/or well-known members of the community or to create the impression of widespread public interest in Communist Party-originated proposals.]

6/51 Cleveland Special Agent Report on Julia Brown:

“Mrs. Julia Brown, 3196 East 123 Street (use T-symbol), on June 3, 1951, verbally informed Special Agent [name deleted] that in the Summer of 1947, one Joseph Hill, who was representing Albert Young, then running for councilman in her ward, requested her permission to place an election poster about Young on her front porch. Mrs. Brown stated she then became interested in politics and was visited by Hill on two or three occasions afterward and discussed politics with him. She stated that after attending a few political rallies on behalf of Albert Young, she was visited by Frieda Katz, who spoke to her about politics. Subsequently, Mrs. Brown was invited to several social affairs at the home of Fried Katz and about Christmas of 1947, Mrs. Brown signed an application for admittance to the Communist Party in the kitchen of the home of Frieda Katz, 3692 East 146 Street, at the request of Katz. At that time, Eugene Bayer was present and approved Mrs. Brown’s application. Mrs. Brown stated that she believed that she had also signed a Communist Party application for her husband, Curlee. Mrs. Brown stated that she joined the Communist Party in 1947 because she felt at that time that the Party was the only answer to racial discrimination. Mrs. Brown stated that after joining the Communist Party sometime around Christmas of 1947 she attended many of the club meetings and many of the larger meetings. In the Spring of 1948 she attended a meeting at the Croatian Hall on St. Clair, at which time Gus Hall was the principal speaker. She stated that it was at this particular meeting that she subscribed to the ‘Daily Worker’ and to ‘The Worker’. She also stated that she had a regular membership card in the Communist Party but that she destroyed it after quitting the Party in the middle of the Summer of 1948. She stated that the reason she quit the Party and stopped attending the meetings was because she had a change of heart and felt that the Communist Party was not the answer she was looking for in regard to race discrimination.” [Cleveland 66-35, Sub 264, SA-#6; 6/27/51 Cleveland Special Agent summary memo to Special Agent in Charge of FBI Cleveland Field Office, pages 1-2.]

However, in her JBS-sponsored speeches during the 1960’s and in her 1966 book she claims that she did not know she was joining the Communist Party. Instead, she thought she had just joined a civil rights group called “*Civil Rights Congress*”.

According to her book, the day after she joined the "*civil rights group*", Julia's husband (Curlee) saw her membership card and he told her that it was a Communist Party membership card - to which Julia claims to have responded:

"I don't know anything about this Communist Party and I don't want to have anything to do with it. It is bad, isn't it?" [*I Testify*, pages 16-17, 19]

According to Julia, her husband replied:

"All I know is that some fellow came to me on one of my jobs and tried to talk me into joining. I asked a friend of mine about it and he told me to stay clear of the Communist Party. There must be something wrong with it." [*I Testify*, page 19]

Julia married her fourth and final husband, Curlee L. Brown, in May 1944. In 1940, Curlee "was listed as a signor of a Communist Party petition filed with the Board of Elections. A Cleveland Police Department report of January 18, 1948, reflects that an automobile bearing license MV 563, listed to Curlee Brown...was observed in the vicinity of the Lenin Memorial meeting on January 18, 1948 at the Public Auditorium, Cleveland, at which William Z. Foster, was the featured speaker." [Cleveland 66-35, Sub 264, #2; 6/27/51 memo from SAC Cleveland to J. Edgar Hoover re: Julia Brown, page 3.] Note: Foster was the Communist Party candidate for President in 1924, 1928, and 1932. In July 1948, Foster was indicted under the Smith Act for subversion, but he did not go on trial because of a serious heart condition.]

Although during her Birch Society period, Julia claimed that she did not know she had joined the Communist Party - it is significant that she told the FBI that she did know it was the Party - and, furthermore, she subscribed to Communist newspapers, attended speeches by Communist Party officials, received Communist Party publications, signed Communist Party petitions, and worked closely with Cleveland-area Party members.

LOLA BELLE HOLMES

Lola Belle Holmes, is another former member of the Communist Party who subsequently became an FBI informant, and later, a paid speaker for the John Birch Society.

During her 1965 testimony before the House Committee on Un-American Activities, Lola stated that she was born in Waterproof, LA on April 22, 1916. However, a grandchild of hers told me that she was actually born April 12, 1912 and that birthdate also is reflected on her death certificate.

Lola moved to Chicago circa 1941. From 1946 to 1958 Lola was a member of Local 212, International Ladies Garment Workers Union, as well as a delegate to Chicago Federation of Labor for 7 years. Lola testified that in 1958 the ILGWU Executive Board discovered that she was a Communist and

they terminated her union membership.

From August 1957 to January 24, 1963, Lola worked inside the Communist Party in Chicago and she provided information about Communist Party matters to the FBI.

Lola attended the Communist Party's 17th National Convention (December 10, 1959 in New York City) as an Alternate Delegate for the State of Illinois. She was a member of the Illinois State Committee and the Illinois State Executive Board of the CPUSA. She also served on the CP's National Negro Commission. Lola also helped organize and then became the first woman Vice-President of the Negro American Labor Council.

Lola surfaced on January 24, 1963 to testify before the Subversive Activities Control Board against Claude Lightfoot, the CPUSA Chairman in Illinois. She also was a principal witness at May 1965 hearings in Chicago of the House Committee on Un-American Activities.

LOLA'S HUAC TESTIMONY REVEALS MANY CONTRADICTIONS OF JBS DOGMA

During her HUAC testimony, Lola made a number of statements that contradict Birch Society dogma. One has to wonder why she associated herself with the Birch Society?

Her primary speech under the auspices of the JBS was entitled "*Is The Civil Rights Movement Directed From The Kremlin?*". The answer to the question was a foregone conclusion.

.....LOLA and CIVIL RIGHTS MOVEMENT.....

The Birch Society publicity release on Lola described her civil rights activities as follows:

"During that time she carried out orders from Moscow to gain control of the 'civil rights' movement and use it as the torch to light a fire of revolution in America."

One is struck by the contradiction between standard JBS dogma versus the aforementioned claim that she was instructed to "*gain control*" of the civil rights movement.

Standard JBS dogma maintains that the civil rights movement was "*created*" and "*controlled*" by Communists, and it "*serves only Communist purposes*"... so why was it supposedly necessary for Lola to work toward "*gaining control*" of something that the CPUSA supposedly had created and was using from its inception?

Not long after Lola's January 1963 testimony before the Subversive Activities Control Board against

Illinois Communist Party Chairman Claude Lightfoot she entered the orbit of the John Birch Society. A Birch Society section leader in the Chicago area invited Lola to attend JBS meetings---and thus began her indoctrination into JBS dogma. However, her alarmist and inflammatory statements and assertions during her JBS-sponsored speeches produced numerous inquiries to the FBI which requested the Bureau's evaluation of her credibility. By 1966, one note from FBI Director Hoover's office observed:

"After she was discontinued as an informant, she displayed signs of emotional instability and it was necessary to admonish her to cease making false statements which were embarrassing to the Bureau." [FBI HQ file 134-4473; no serial number, 10/3/66 "Office of the Director" note]. See copy here:



.....LOLA ON NAACP.....

Lola's NAACP comments parallel those made by FBI informant (and Birch Society speaker) Julia Brown. (see summary above)

Prior to appearing on the Birch Society's lecture circuit as a paid speaker Lola (like Julia Brown) characterized CPUSA attempts to infiltrate NAACP as unsuccessful due to the anti-Communist leadership of the NAACP. Only after joining the JBS as paid speakers did both Lola and Julia dramatically change their tune.

Lola discussed CPUSA attempts to infiltrate NAACP and Negro American Labor Council on during her HUAC testimony:

"I was on the NAACP caucus of the Communist Party from 1957 until 1959. I was nominated as secretary for the NAACP against the incumbent, and at that time we lost the election...Subsequently, the national office declared the election valid and the Party slate was thrown out. After the Party slate was thrown out, the Party caucus had a meeting in 1960 and decided to pull its forces out of the NAACP because they realized they could not work in the

NAACP effectively." [Communist Activities in The Chicago Illinois Area, part 1; Hearings before the House Committee on Un-American Activities; May 25-27 and June 22, 1965, page 372.]

HUAC Chairman Edwin Willis then asked Lola:

"Do I take it that these caucuses in the NAACP were not with the knowledge or approval of the leadership of the NAACP?" [Ibid]

Lola replied:

"It definitely was not with the knowledge...I want it to be very clear the leadership of either organization did not know that the CP had caucuses working in their respective organizations. When they found it out, they found out who they were, they immediately dropped them from the membership list." [Ibid]

.....JBS on NAACP.....

By contrast, the JBS description of the NAACP and its leaders (Walter White and Roy Wilkins) focused on all the alleged "Communist affiliations" which NAACP officials had.

For example, the following comments are excerpts from the Birch Society's summary about the NAACP which is published in Volume 1 of its *Biographical Dictionary of the Left* (pages 140-153):

"In 1923, the NAACP began to receive grants from the Garland Fund which was a major source for the financing of Communist Party enterprises."

"The indefatigable Walter F. White, NAACP Executive Secretary, was weekly in Washington cultivating white power which was often Red."

"[Walter] White, as George Schuyler noted, worked hand-in-hand with the Communists. Wilkins, on the NAACP's staff since 1931, went out of his way to praise the Communist Party for the help it gave to the Negroes. And from 1937 until 1949, Wilkins was affiliated with a number of Communist fronts and enterprises."

In commenting upon Manning Johnson, (another African-American who had been a Communist Party member but who later associated himself with the John Birch Society) the JBS observed:

"He did testify as to the Communist character of the NAACP since he has been assigned the job of bringing Negro organizations into the Communist orbit."

Other JBS comments about NAACP:

"From its inception to the present, no matter the protestations of Langston Hughes or any other NAACP apologist, the organization's officials and its known members, collectively and individually, have represented the influential

left, the leadership of Communist fronts, and leftwing political and pacifist groups, and the most effective of the anti-anti-Communist establishment."

"The relationship between the NAACP and the Communist Party has been demonstrable through the activities of those attorneys who have held office in the NAACP, its branches, or the 'Committee of 100' which supports the NAACP's Legal Defense and Educational Fund."

.....FBI on NAACP.....

The Bureau prepared two comprehensive monographs on the history of "*The Communist Party and the Negro*". In the October 1956 edition, the Bureau concluded:

"Persons identified with the Communist Party and the NAACP have, in the past, acted jointly and frequently engaged in parallel activities. However, it must be kept in mind that the ultimate aims of these two groups are entirely distinct. The CP seeks to foster discord and discontent among the Negro race by agitation and propaganda...whereas the goal of the NAACP is to achieve full racial integration and equality within the present form of government. It is to be noted that the CPUSA, in order to confuse the American people, is attempting to make its policies parallel to those of the NAACP on controversial, racial issues....The NAACP held its 47th annual convention in San Francisco CA from June 26 to July 1, 1956. It re-affirmed its anti-communist position and at the same time extended its policy of non-cooperation with communist-controlled groups to declare communists ineligible for membership in the NAACP."

The monograph then goes on to discuss attempts by Communists to infiltrate and use NAACP chapters around the country and how local NAACP leaders repulsed such attempts.

Also see 8/23/63 FBI monograph "*Communist Party USA—Negro Question*", pages 15-17:

"The CP has at various times during the existence of the NAACP evidenced interest in infiltrating the NAACP...In view of the CP's interest in and attempts to infiltrate the NAACP the FBI had conducted an investigation to determine the results of the Party's efforts....This investigation, together with our over-all coverage and investigation of the CP, has disclosed that some local NAACP chapters have been infiltrated by CP members but the CP, on a national level, has not been successful in influencing the NAACP or its policies. While some local chapters have been infiltrated, the CP members in such locals do not exercise any influence therein. In other areas the local CP's are not taking any action to infiltrate the local chapters. The following are specific examples:

On March 25, 1963, there was no CP influence in the St. Louis NAACP.

On April 3, 1963, there was no current CP program to infiltrate or attempt to gain domination of the NAACP in Los Angeles.

On April 4, 1963, the Party in Philadelphia had shown no intention of infiltrating the NAACP." [HQ 100-3-116, #253X]

Also see Bircher Julia Brown's 1966 book for confirmation of this point.

"Many times I have been asked if the NAACP was a Communist front organization. I have been able to say, truthfully, that, so far as I could discern, it was not. Indeed the great Walter White, executive secretary of the NAACP prior to his death, fought Communism with might and main. Older NAACP leaders have been equally fierce in their opposition to the Red conspiracy. But it has only been by dint of great effort on the part of these loyal men and women that the Party has been thwarted in its attempts to completely dominate the NAACP." ... [Julia Brown, *I Testify: My Years As An FBI Undercover Agent*, Western Islands, 1966, pages 124-125.

Notice, too, Julia's praise for Walter White versus the opposite conclusion reached by the Birch Society cited in the "*JBS on NAACP*" section above.

Julia also mentions that the wife of one prominent CPUSA official "**hated the NAACP as did all other Communists.**" (Ibid, page 125]

And referring to the Communist Party attempt to exploit the murder of 14 year old Emmett Till to its advantage, Julia observed:

"Greater success might have attended these efforts had the Party not been opposed by the NAACP...The CPUSA criticized the NAACP bitterly for not conducting a more militant campaign of protests and demonstrations. The NAACP 'adamantly refused' to 'let itself' be used, and counseled its members to avoid any action which would reflect adversely on Negroes." [Ibid, page 165].

In addition, see Julia's comment in her March 1961 Ebony magazine interview entitled "*I Was A Spy For The FBI*", wherein she stated that Communists had "**little or no influence**" within the NAACP and she concluded that:

"I'm 100 percent with the NAACP and I think they are doing a wonderful job. Top government officials are aware that the NAACP is legal and is working in the American way for first class citizenship for all Americans."

Incidentally, in a previous 1953 edition of the FBI monograph, the NAACP is discussed at much greater length in a section whose caption is: "*The Communist Party and Legitimate Negro Protest and Improvement Organizations*." The report confirms Julia's observation about Communist Party contempt for NAACP leadership and policies.

In 1964, J. Edgar Hoover met with American Legion National Commander Don Johnson. Hoover discussed his feud with Martin Luther King Jr. But in contrast, according to a FBI memo summarizing the meeting, Hoover gave this evaluation of NAACP Executive Secretary Roy Wilkins:

"He also referred to Roy Wilkins. He mentioned that Wilkins was a responsible type individual attempting to do a good job." [HQ 94-1-17998, #1741 which is an 11/11/64 memo from Assistant Director C.D. DeLoach regarding Hoover's meeting on 11/10/64 with American Legion National Commander Don Johnson, page 2]

In early April 1947, NAACP Executive Secretary Walter White wrote to FBI Director J. Edgar Hoover to request a statement by Hoover on the NAACP which the organization could use in a pamphlet it was preparing. Hoover replied with the following statement:

["Equality, freedom, and tolerance are essential in a democratic government. The NAACP has done much to preserve these principles and to perpetuate the desires of our founding fathers. With best wishes and kind regards. J. Edgar Hoover."](#) [HQ 61-3176, serial #378X; JEH 4/14/47 letter to Walter White.]

In contrast to the JBS position, the FBI considered both Walter White and Roy Wilkins to be responsible moderate anti-Communists and it frequently praised their leadership of the NAACP. Roy Wilkins was one of the black leaders whom the FBI thought most desirable to replace Martin Luther King Jr. as the leading advocate for African-Americans.

A 1955 FBI memo summarized data in the Bureau's file on the NAACP with respect to Communist Party interest in the organization:

Pg 1: ["NAACP incorporated in New York City in 1911. Declared aim is to secure full citizenship for Negroes. Bureau is in receipt of reports since 1941 re Communist attempts to infiltrate NAACP. CP has had measure of success in controlling isolated chapters but unable to dominate the organization on state or national level. National Convention of NAACP in 1955 reaffirmed stand taken at 1950 convention to oppose Communism...Dominant figures are Roy Wilkins and Thurgood Marshall, executive secretary and special counsel, respectively, who have been associated with CP front organizations in 1940's but now appear to be strongly anti-Communist."](#)

Pg 4: ["All Negro Party members have been instructed to join NAACP chapters to exert their influence in NAACP programs. Local chapters in some localities, e.g Chicago, have been penetrated to the extent that CP members have become officers of these chapters. However, most chapters, as well as the national office, are acutely aware of the constant attempt on the part of the CP to dominate these local groups and are actively combating the Communists in their efforts."](#) [HQ 61-3176, serial #1077; 10/21/55 memo from A.H. Belmont to L.V. Boardman.]

In April 1968, FBI Assistant Director William Sullivan prepared a paper for publication in *Religion In Life*, a journal produced by the University of North Carolina Law School.

In a section captioned *"Gains In Equality"*, Sullivan discusses ["precedent-establishing Negroes \(who\) through hard work and abundance of ability and talent have become nationally and internationally prominent."](#)

Among the persons he cited as deserving of respect and praise and ["outstanding recognition"](#) were the following individuals whom the Birch Society considered as anything but deserving of respect and praise:

Thurgood Marshall, U.S. Supreme Court Justice and former General Counsel of NAACP; Robert C.

Weaver, Secretary of Housing and Urban Development; Ralph Bunche (who) "has ably served this country at the United Nations"; Carl Rowan "who has served his country with distinction"; Roy Wilkins, A. Philip Randolph and Whitney Young (who) "have used their great skill and resources to gain so much for their fellow Negroes through remedies available under the law." [William C. Sullivan, *Communism and the American Negro*, Winter 1968 *Religion in Life*, page 600]

.....A. PHILIP RANDOLPH.....

During her 5/25/65 HUAC testimony Lola described A. Phillip Randolph as "anti-Communist".

In her HUAC testimony Lola described the formation of the Negro American Labor Council in 1960:

"It was organized by A. Philip Randolph with trade union leaders all over the country. They definitely were not Communists. As you know, Mr. Randolph is not a Communist and...most of the national executive board members or vice presidents were not Communists." [Communist Activities in The Chicago Illinois Area, part 1; Hearings before the House Committee on Un-American Activities; May 25-27 and June 22, 1965, page 372.]

By contrast, the JBS characterized Randolph as a fellow-traveler, (or worse).

After presenting a lengthy litany about Randolph's alleged connections to subversive organizations, the closing sentence in the Birch's Society's summary about Randolph provides a classic example of Birch guilt-by-innuendo: "Randolph learned his lessons well as he rubbed elbows with Communists over the past three decades." [Francis X. Gannon, *Biographical Dictionary of the Left*, Volume 1, page 488.]

The FBI position on Randolph and the NALC:

"CP members have opposed A. Philip Randolph, President of the NALC since its founding convention, primarily because of his opposition to CP infiltration of the organization." [HQ 100-3-116, #253X = 8/23/63 FBI monograph "Communist Party USA—Negro Question", page 20]

For additional information concerning Lola Belle Holmes and Julia Brown and the Birch Society's attack on NAACP see my August 2008 26-page report on former FBI Special Agent Dan Smoot at: <http://ernie1241.googlepages.com/smoot>

.....NATIONAL URBAN LEAGUE.....

In early 1965 Lola went to work for the Chicago chapter of the National Urban League. At that time, the national leader of the Urban League was Whitney Young Jr. whom the JBS described as "an ultra-liberal politician, a socialist ideologue, an affiliate of ultra-leftwingers, and a suave but militant racist agitator." [Francis X. Gannon, *Biographical Dictionary of the Left*, Volume 1, page 611.]

Understandably, none of the Birch Society's publicity releases about Lola mentioned her association with, and employment by the Urban League!

[To continue to Chapter 8 regarding "*Right-Wing Critics of the Birch Society*" - see:](#)

<https://sites.google.com/site/ernie124102/jbs-4>

OR --

[To continue to Chapter 9 which is "*Documentary History of the John Birch Society*". - see:](#)

<https://sites.google.com/site/ernie1241/>

MY RESEARCH: <http://ernie1241.googlepages.com/home> **EMAIL:** ernie1241@aol.com

CONSERVATIVE CRITICS OF ROBERT WELCH AND THE BIRCH SOCIETY

revised 02/09/12

What follows is a representative sample of comments about Robert Welch and the JBS from prominent anti-communist conservatives and other authoritative sources.

Keep in mind as you read these comments, that many of them originate from sources whose writings were recommended (or published) by the Birch Society for all serious students of the Communist Conspiracy.

In fact, many of these individuals were personal friends and acquaintances of Robert Welch and/or they often recommended, endorsed, and financially supported the same organizations, publications, and causes which Robert Welch did!

Marian Welch (widow of Robert Welch) – AP report in *New York Times*, 9/1/86, p24)

"I have nothing to do with the Society. The people who are running it are not standing on what it started out to be at all."

Fred Koch, former JBS National Council member (*Wichita KS Eagle*, 1/8/85, "*Wichitans Found Welch Extreme*" by Bill Hirschman)

"Fred Koch's widow, Mary, recalled that Welch '*suspected everybody, and my husband thought he was too extreme and he withdrew his support.*' Koch particularly took offense at Welch's characterization of former President Dwight Eisenhower as a Communist pawn, she said." [Koch reportedly terminated his JBS membership shortly before his death in 1967.]

Barry Goldwater (*San Diego CA Union*, 3/30/61, "*Goldwater Hits Birch Views*" Associated Press report regarding Goldwater answers to questions regarding his views on Robert Welch and the JBS when interviewed at Pepperdine College Freedom Forum):

"Sen. Barry Goldwater told newsmen today that he disagreed with many of the theories of the right-wing John Birch Society but was '*impressed by the type of people in it.*'

Newsmen asked Goldwater these questions, and got these replies:

-Does he agree with the Society that this republic is not a fit form of government with which to fight communism?:

'*I don't agree*'.

-Does he believe, like the Society, that ex-President Eisenhower was a tool of the Communists?

'I certainly don't'

-Does he agree with the Society that Chief Justice Earl Warren should be impeached?

'No, I don't'

-Does he agree with Society contentions that the Communists have influenced some decisions of the Supreme Court?

'I do not'

Sen. Barry Goldwater, 1962 letter-to-editor, *National Review*:

<http://www.commentarymagazine.com/viewarticle.cfm/goldwater—the-john-birch-society—and-me-11248>

"I think you have clearly stated the problem which Mr. Welch's continued leadership of the John Birch Society poses for sincere conservatives. . . . Mr. Welch is only one man, and I do not believe his views, far removed from reality and common sense as they are, represent the feelings of most members of the John Birch Society. . . . Because of this, I believe the best thing Mr. Welch could do to serve the cause of anti-Communism in the United States would be to resign. . . . We cannot allow the emblem of irresponsibility to attach to the conservative banner."

Sen. Barry Goldwater (KTLA-TV, Los Angeles, taped interview of Goldwater by Steve Allen broadcast on 5/29/64 - regarding Welch's book-length "private letter", entitled *The Politician*:

"I think I was supposed to have read it in the closet with a candle, and this was the famous book that downgraded the Eisenhower brothers and Mrs. Roosevelt and Mr. Truman. I told him the next morning, when I returned the book, that he would be very wise to destroy all copies because he couldn't prove a word of it and it would do great damage to the conservative cause and his own friends if it were allowed to get out." Goldwater also suggested that Welch step down as leader of the Birch Society: "If he removed himself as leader of the Birch Society, it might allow that organization to proceed." [See *Los Angeles Herald-Examiner*, 5/27/64, p1-2, "Barry To Welch--Step Down".]

Sen. Barry Goldwater (*National Review*, 10/19/65)

"Welch's statements have generally been wrong, ill-advised and, at times, ill-tempered."

Sen. Barry Goldwater (*The American Adviser* newsletter, 5/62, p3)

"I happen to know Bob Welch personally, yet I believe that many of the public statements he has made are unwarranted and unprovable. At the time Mr. Welch originally made his statement about President Eisenhower I told him that even though his statement was included in a privately circulated paper, it could result in a great deal of harm to the movement that he was attempting to create. I have disagreed with him privately and publicly on occasion and I believe that the John Birch Society would be far more effective if its leader were not making these intemperate statements."

Sen. Barry Goldwater (upon reading Welch's unpublished "private letter" *The Politician*)

"Goldwater telephoned Welch and reportedly stated: *'I want no part in this. I won't even have it around. If you were smart, you'd burn every copy you have.'*" (Robert Alan Goldberg book, *Barry Goldwater*, Yale University Press, 1995, p. 137)

James Burnham (*National Review*, 10/19/65, p. 925 - on the JBS)

"For years, it has used words irresponsibly, chiefly for their magically evocative and emotion-rousing effect..."

"Responsible conservatives have long tried to believe that the JBS, though 'misguided' was 'going in the same direction' and therefore an 'ally'...But, unfortunately, under the years of brainwashing and organization control by Robert Welch, the Society as a collective body has taken off in directions where no conservative

can prudently venture and has become a suitable ally only for confusion and sterility. Its stand on Vietnam confirms, not for the first time, that any American who seriously wants to contribute to his country's security and well-being and to oppose Communism will have to stay clear of the JBS."

Robert H. Bork (While recommending Jeffrey Hart's 2005 book, *The Making of the Conservative Mind*): Bork refers to William F. Buckley "who rescued American conservatism from the fever swamps where dwelt the likes of the John Birch Society, making conservatism not merely respectable but the dominant intellectual force in our politics and culture."

J. Edgar Hoover 11/18/64 press conference:

"Personally, I have little respect for the head of the John Birch Society since he linked the names of former President Dwight D. Eisenhower, the late John Foster Dulles, and former CIA Director Allen Dulles with communism."

J. Edgar Hoover, Warren Commission testimony (scroll to bottom of page in the link for text of Hoover's remarks quoted below):

<http://www.jfk-assassination.de/warren/wch/vol5/page101.php>

"Mr. Hoover.

I have read that piece. My comment on it is this in general: I think the extreme right is just as much a danger to the freedom of this country as the extreme left. There are groups, organizations, and individuals on the extreme right who make these very violent statements, allegations that General Eisenhower was a Communist, disparaging references to the Chief Justice and at the other end of the spectrum you have these leftists who make wild statements charging almost anybody with being a Fascist or belonging to some of these so-called extreme right societies. Now, I have felt, and I have said publicly in speeches, that they are just as much a danger, at either end of the spectrum. They don't deal with facts. Anybody who will allege that General Eisenhower was a Communist agent, has something wrong with him.

A lot of people read such allegations because I get some of the weirdest letters wanting to know whether we have inquired to find out whether that is true. I have known General Eisenhower quite well myself and I have found him to be a sound, level-headed man." ...

FBI memo characterization of JBS, 2/8/61

On 2/8/61 the FBI received a phone call from a self-identified JBS member from Columbus, Ohio concerning the House Committee on Un-American Activities filmstrip entitled *Operation Abolition*. The JBS member asked J. Edgar Hoover to respond to critical comments about the filmstrip made by a local Columbus minister during his Sunday sermon. The Bureau memo observed:

"The John Birch Society is an extremist organization which was founded by Robert Welch in Indianapolis, Indiana in December 1958...It is quite apparent [JBS member name deleted] and the John Birch Society are attempting to involve the Bureau and the Director personally in the controversy concerning this film. We certainly should not allow ourselves to be placed in a position where an organization of the character of the JBS can use statements attributed to the Bureau or to the Director to support its position in this or any other matter. This organization would not hesitate to twist any statement by the Bureau to confirm with its extremist position." J. Edgar Hoover wrote "OK" on memo as did Associate Director Tolson. [FBI HQ file 62-7582, #4729; 2/8/61 memo from A.J. Decker to A.H. Belmont re: JBS member phone call; also in HQ file 62-104401, #unrecorded]

J. Edgar Hoover, 4/27/62 FBI memo discussing Cong. Claude Pepper:

"I would no more give a boost to Pepper than I would to the Birchites. They are two extremes and equally bad."

J. Edgar Hoover re: Birchers-as-policemen controversy in Philadelphia, 11/18/64 FBI memo

"The Director replied that this was a problem for the city administration in Philadelphia. He stated he had no respect for Welch...because of his unjustified criticism against General Eisenhower..."

"The Director was asked for his opinion informally regarding the JBS. He replied that any group which is supposedly dedicated to observing freedom should be meticulous in the statements they make. The Director indicated that if a person lies to you once, he certainly would not believe him again. He stated that organizations should never make wild charges."

10/28/61 FBI Domestic Intelligence Division memo regarding their concern about JBS and CPUSA

By memo dated October 2, 1961, J. Edgar Hoover told Attorney General Robert Kennedy about a 9/27/61 briefing on communism given at FBI headquarters to the American Bar Association Committee on Communist Tactics, Strategy and Objectives.

The Attorney General praised this activity and he then asked J. Edgar Hoover to consider a proposal for expanding such instruction to include FBI seminars on communism at FBI field offices for high school students and college freshmen "to create a nucleus of informed students to help offset and combat the Communist drive for young members and to start the development of responsible and informed community leaders."

The idea was to set up such seminars along the lines of what the Bureau did at the FBI National Academy for law enforcement officers from around the country. The Bureau's Domestic Intelligence Division subsequently analyzed this proposal in a 10/28/61 memo. The memo contains a paragraph entitled "Arguments in Favor" - copied below. Notice the reference to the JBS.

"Unquestionably there are apparent arguments in favor of such a procedure, including the reaching of a large segment of the American public during their formative years and thus thwarting to a great extent current recruiting drives among youths by the Communist Party USA, and combating the growth of extreme rightists as exemplified by the John Birch Society." [HQ 62-106364, #72, 10/28/61 memo from Mr. Sullivan to Mr. Belmont, page 1]

Herbert A. Philbrick (former FBI informant of I Led 3 Lives fame), 3/4/88 letter to me:

"Very early on I formed the opinion that sincere as he was, Bob Welch was 'off the mark' in his crusade. Rather than hitting - or even aiming at - 'the bull's eye', his arrows were landing all around the circumference of the target. As with the late Senator Joseph McCarthy, I don't think Bob ever really understood the communist mind; how a communist thinks. I never read anything of his suggesting a true understanding of dialectical materialism; and, as Chambers and many others have pointed out, if you don't understand D.M., you cannot grasp the real meaning of Marxism-Leninism."

Frank S. Meyer (*National Review* magazine, 10/19/65, p920)

"The false analysis and conspiratorial mania of the John Birch Society has moved beyond diversion and waste of the devotion of its members, to the mobilization of that devotion in ways directly anti-conservative and dangerous to the interest of the United States. It is no longer possible to consider the Society merely as moving toward legitimate objectives in a misguided way. However worthy the original motivations of those who have joined it, it is time for them to realize that the John Birch Society is rapidly losing whatever it had in common with patriotism or conservatism—and to do so before their own minds become warped by adherence to its unrolling psychosis of conspiracy."

And on the civil rights movement:

"It is true that here (as everywhere it profits them) Communist groups are active, seeking to take advantage of the turmoil and are sometimes successful in penetrating sections of the leadership of the movement. But the movement is not a Communist movement, as the John Birch Society implies with every device of rhetoric, with pictures, with innuendo, and often with straight-forward statement. There is, of course, much in the civil rights movement that conservatives should oppose, but when it is attacked in the Birch manner, on the

basis of an obsessed insistence on conspiracy ('it's all a Communist plot') sober opposition is discredited and great positive harm done the conservative cause."

William Henry Chamberlin (11/9/65 Wall Street Journal column "John Birch Society No Help To Conservatism")

"One of the most thorough available expositions of the bizarre views of the John Birch Society is to be found in a recent issue of *"National Review."* This is an avowedly conservative magazine and its editor, William F. Buckley Jr., "third man" in the recent New York mayoral contest, belongs, on his writing and speaking record, in political rightfield. But the editors of *'National Review'* have evidently reached the conclusion that Mr. Welch and the John Birch Society which he founded and rules with an iron hand represent a handicap, not an aid, to the conservative movement in general and the Republican Party in particular. And they make out a pretty good case for their point of view."

Congressman Gordon H. Scherer (OH), of House Committee on Un-American Activities

Scherer comment reported in 4/2/61 *Dayton OH Daily News* article by Dick Cull Jr., "*Ridiculous, Scherer Says of Communist Label on Ike*". Scherer quoted as saying that if Welch made charge that President Eisenhower was a Communist sympathizer, then it was "*perfectly asinine and ridiculous.*"

Lee Edwards, Distinguished Fellow in Conservative Thought, Heritage Foundation, quoted in 12/3/10 Matthew Boyle article posted on website *Daily Caller*: "*Conservatives Question Whether John Birch Society Should Be Accepted As Part Of The Tea Party Movement*":

"If the John Birch Society, in its present incarnation, was to repudiate Robert Welch and his fantasies about Dwight David Eisenhower, and was to repudiate the many issues of [the organization's magazine] *American Opinion*, then maybe, maybe you could begin discussing whether or not they have any place in the current political discussion. But, until, and if, that day comes, show them door politely, but firmly."

"This is not just a personal duel between Bill Buckley and Robert Welch. The responsible leaders of the conservative movement all shared that particular opinion, and I'm sure would still do so. After Bill Buckley properly read the John Birch Society out the conservative movement, Barry Goldwater, **Ronald Reagan** and Russell Kirk, three very prominent conservatives, all endorsed the *National Review's* position."

Congressman Martin Dies, former Chairman of House Committee on Un-American Activities, and paid contributor for articles he wrote for JBS magazine, *American Opinion*

Deposition in libel lawsuit: *William C. McGaw and Saddlebag Press Publishing Company, Inc. v. A.A. Webster Jr., alias Patrick J. Hale*, 9959 Otero, New Mexico, 1964, p537-538.

Cong. Dies was asked about Robert Welch's characterization of President Eisenhower as a "*conscious agent*" of the Communist conspiracy:

Q: "In your experience in investigating un-American activities, Congressman, would you not say that the malign of constitutional authority in this nation in such terms as that is, in fact, un-American?"

Dies: "Well, I certainly would say that a statement that any President of the United States was a conscious agent of a foreign power and serving the interest of that foreign power would be serving—what did you say?"

Q: "Un-American purposes"

Dies: "Yes, I would say it would be un-American in the sense that I do not believe that any man was ever President of the United States that would become the conscious agent, and, of course I do not know that that statement was made."

Editorial in *Left and Right: A Journal of Libertarian Thought*, Winter 1966, p12 criticizes *National Review* magazine for being “*increasingly Establishment-y*” but then agrees with the fundamental *National Review* premise that:

“...Mr. Robert Welch and the John Birch Society...embarrass the Conservative Movement by accepting its own major premises (such as the bogey of the all-pervasive ‘*international Communist conspiracy*’) and deduce from it...absurd but consistent conclusions (e.g. Welch on Eisenhower as a dedicated Communist.)”

Thomas Winter, Editor, conservative newspaper, *Human Events* - 6/15/81 letter to me

“We have never taken a ‘*public position*’ as such, on the John Birch Society or many other groups. We believe many well-meaning conservatives are members of the JBS, but that if they buy all the talk of ‘*Insiders*’ running everything, they get a distorted view of political reality and their effectiveness is reduced accordingly. ‘*Conspiracy*’ theories are convenient and they answer many people’s cravings for total explanations. They just happen to be false.”

Joe Crail, President Coast Federal Savings and Loan Assn’s Free Enterprise Dept described Birch Society as “a wrongheaded extremist cult. It’s a dictatorship type of organization which I wouldn’t want to belong to.” [New York Times, 8-12-62, p64 “*School Study Aid on Coast Scored*”]

Col. William R. Kintner of Foreign Policy Research Institute comments at annual National War College, National Strategy Seminar in 1961 as reported in *Washington Post*, 8/7/61, pA2, “*Seminars on the Cold War Spring From A Top Secret Report*”:

“Kintner, it should be noted, has since been quoted at another seminar as attacking the John Birch Society for playing into the hands of the Communists.”

G-2 Army Intelligence Analysis of *The Politician* by Robert Welch [2/11/59 memo by Lt. Col. Ned W. Glenn, Acting Chief, Security Division, Army Intelligence with attachment of review by 108th CIC Group, Governors Island, New York, FBI HQ file 62-104401, serials 7 and 8 and Boston FBI field 100-32899, serial #7]

“As an evaluation of the motives of Robert H.W. Welch Jr. in writing *The Politician* and distributing it, it is felt that he is a Republican of the extreme right-wing of the party who has become progressively more and more disillusioned by the post-World War II soft attitude of the United States toward International Communism and who has been frustrated by the preponderance of moderate Republicans in the present Administration...An attack such as this one on the Chief Executive of the United States can only favor those elements of society who oppose the democratic processes by which we elect Presidents, and, as such, aids the cause of International Communism which the author claims to abhor. The author must be considered to have become unbalanced on his subject or to be consciously aiding the enemies of the Republic. In view of his previous writings and background, it must be concluded that his hate for Communism has obscured his judgment and that he has written an unbalanced book.”

George Romney, Republican Governor of Michigan

Cited in *Chapman v. Romney*, Docket #1810, Michigan Court of Appeals, 2/14/67 [6 Mich App 36 (1967); 148N.W. 2d 230]. Chapman, a member of the JBS, sued Gov. Romney for slander. The Court found in favor of Governor Romney - who had said about the JBS and GOP that:

“I think the party's future depends upon repudiating the John Birch Society as an organization and avoiding any possibility of the society developing influence within the Party. I think this is because from experience, I have found that the John Birch Society as an organization uses methods of infiltration and subversion and tactics that we associate with other secret organizations like the Communists. And while there are members of the society that I am sure are not themselves responsible for such conduct, this conduct on the part of the organization makes it essential, as far as I'm concerned, that the Republican Party repudiate the John Birch Society as an organization.”

EX-SOVIET SPY Antoli Granovsky on Birch Society

In July 1961, wire services and major newspapers in the U.S. reported comments made by former Soviet spy Anatoli Granovsky who was a Captain of Political Intelligence in the Ministry of State Security of the Soviet Union in 1945 and 1946 and who previously was in the NKVD (Soviet Secret Police).

The Birch Society was so impressed with Granovsky's credentials that they chose to publish the paperback edition of Granovsky's book in 1962 and the JBS sold it in their American Opinion bookstores. The hardback edition was published by the noted conservative book publisher, Henry Regnery.

Granovsky's comment:

"The Soviet Communists would sacrifice a thousand American Communists to save the John Birch Society, for instance.

I don't mean the Birch Society is Communist-infiltrated. It doesn't have to be. By discrediting prominent Americans, it confuses the population about whom to trust. In socializing Czechoslovakia...we did everything to divide the armed forces units trained by the British and the Americans by spreading rumors about officers until they were so thoroughly discredited their men would not obey them and they had to be removed."

George Sokolsky (conservative columnist, 4/7/61 column, *Washington Post*, pA17, "The John Birch Society"):

"I disagree with the John Birch Society's campaign to impeach the Chief Justice, Earl Warren. I wrote that it is both strategically and tactically unsound."

"Welch organized as he thinks the Communists organize, namely by arranging for small cells, often unknown to each other. Communists do not organize that way at all. It is the Soviet espionage organizations that are organized that way. No one can question Welch's sincerity or his desire to serve his country. How deeply he has studied Hegel, Darwin, Marx, Engels, Lenin, Bukharin, Bernstein, and the history of the 19th century, I do not know. He jumps at conclusions often based upon misapplication of terms. But none of this is as criminal as the treason of the Communists and many of their fellow-travelers. It is not sound to believe that everyone who disagrees in 1961...with the economics of Mark Hanna is a Communist...It is so easy to straighten out many of these things by a definition of terms. A Communist is a person who accepts a clearly stated dogmatic set of sociological postulates...Neither ex-President Eisenhower nor Chief Justice Earl Warren fits the specifications"

Cardinal Richard Cushing (Roman Catholic Bishop of Boston in 4/13/61 Boston newspaper interview re: Robert Welch's description of President Eisenhower)

"He also said anyone who charges former President Eisenhower with Communist leanings is '*speaking absurdities*' "

When Cardinal Cushing was asked during an April 1964 radio interview [WNAC-Boston] about JBS comments about President John F. Kennedy, Cushing observed:

"I would prefer imprisonment and death under a slave state than membership in an organization which has branded a martyred President of the **U.S. as a Communist.**"

"In view of the extreme statements and articles printed or approved by this society in recent years, I could not in conscience endorse this organization nor would I be affiliated with it in any way. Furthermore, I do not consider this society as an effective way of confronting the international conspiracy of atheistic communism."

Russell Kirk (*America* magazine, "The Birchites", 2/17/62, p644):

"Robert Welch...is remarkably ignorant of the nature of the Communist conspiracy which he denounces; and the sound of his own words has led him to the verge of what Burke called '*metaphysical madness*'. Ever since

he founded his society he has done more to injure the cause of responsible conservatism than to act effectively against communism...Many members of the Birch Society, I think,...got into the Society without knowing Mr. Welch's drift, and might have left some time ago, had they not disliked seeming to desert under fire. Already some of the original abler members have drifted away or become inactive. This leaves the Society in the hands of the fanatic fringe of course..."

Russell Kirk (*National Review* magazine, 10/19/65, p928)

"Nothing could do more to discredit all conservatives than the violent language and unreal views regularly found in *American Opinion*. As several conservatively-inclined gentlemen have remarked to me...they would be sorely tempted to believe that the leaders of the Birch Society are agents of the Kremlin subtly working to discredit all opposition to Communism by reducing anti-Communism to absurdity. All Americans of a conservative bent should be warned against associating themselves with an organization which is totally ineffectual in resisting Communism and socialism..."

Father Benjamin L. Masse (S.J.) (*America* magazine, "Can Catholics Tag Along?", 2/17/62, p646-647):

"I submit that Mr. Welch's attitude toward government---disregarding for the moment his false assumptions, distorted history and liberalistic (that is, ultra-liberalistic philosophy)—cannot be reconciled with the Church's social doctrine as that doctrine has been explained and developed by Popes from the time of Leo XIII...Clearly in his denigration of the state and his defense of the completely free market, Mr. Welch is espousing doctrines which the Church rejected seventy years ago. He is not only espousing them: he is making them an integral part of his anti-Communist program...Far from accepting Mr. Welch's thesis that there is no middle ground between the completely free market (*laissez-faire* capitalism) on the one hand, and collectivism, socialism and communism on the other, Pope John believes just the opposite. He goes so far as to say that '*systems of social insurance and social security can contribute effectively to the redistribution of national income according to standards of justice and equity.*' Nor does Pope John stop even there...he vindicates the efforts which all democratic governments, including our own, are making today, '*to control fluctuations in the economy and to bring effective remedies to bear on the problem of mass unemployment.*' Obviously, in the Catholic scheme of things, there is no necessary conflict between private enterprise and government intervention in the economy."

Lawrence Fertig, (*National Review* magazine, 2/27/62, p141)

"I have long known of Welch's theory that American defeats by the Communists could only have been caused by conspiracy at the highest level of government. But I did not realize how far Welch had gone in pursuing this ridiculous logic until I read the profusion of Welch quotations in your article...It is essential for the conservative cause to dissociate itself completely from the irresponsible fringe which seeks to attach itself to this movement."

Anthony Bouscaren, *National Review* magazine, 3/13/62, p177

"Although I sometimes agree with Mr. Welch and believe some of the Birch letter-writing campaigns have been most effective, this does not excuse the untruths and poorly formulated statements he has issued. These have given the other side valuable ammunition with which to try to discredit the entire anti-Communist and conservative movement."

The Editors of *National Review* magazine, 10/19/65, p915 referring to previous article on JBS in *National Review* issue of 2/13/62:

"...we closely analyzed the most recent writings of Mr. Robert Welch and concluded that his distortions disqualified him from effective services as an anti-Communist leader."

National Review, 2/13/62, "The Question of Robert Welch", p83 and 88

"Russell Kirk, replying to a letter addressed to him by an executive of the JBS, writes that he knows Mr. Welch to be a 'likeable, honest, courageous, energetic man' who nevertheless '*by silliness and injustice of utterance*' has become '*the kiss of death*' for any conservative enterprise. Congressman Walter Judd said

in Minneapolis that he considers Mr. Welch's judgment so flawed as to disqualify him from leadership of an effective anti-Communist movement. Senator Barry Goldwater said he feels Mr. Welch should resign; and, should he refuse to do so, the Society should disband and reorganize under different leadership, Fulton Lewis Jr., at the Human Events Conference in Washington criticized Mr. Welch's direction of the Society." ...

"The fact of the matter is that Mr. Welch, by what Russell Kirk has called '*an excess of zeal, intemperance, and imprudence*' promotes a split in the conservative movement...Mr. Welch, for all his good intentions, threatens to divert militant conservative action to irrelevance and ineffectuality...Mr. Welch has revived in many men the spirit of patriotism, and that same spirit calls now for rejecting out of a love of truth and country, his false counsels."

Sen. John Tower-TX (*New York Times*, "*Tower Hits Birchers*", 2/17/62, p20)

"They have used bad judgment, minimizing serious threats and maximizing less serious ones. I demand that conservatives reject Mr. Welch's leadership" which Tower described as "*terribly misguided*".

Sen. John Tower-TX (Tower 3/14/62 letter-to-editor Glenn O. Young, published in *American Adviser* newsletter, Sapulpa OK), March 1962, page 2:

"Thank you for your letter and for the opportunity to back up my public statements regarding Mr. Robert Welch: In my opinion, he has compromised the effectiveness, indeed, the good name, of the John Birch Society, by intemperate and irresponsible pronouncements..."

I have not criticized the membership or objectives of the John Birch Society. I have criticized Mr. Welch's leadership because he has become a divisive and weakening factor in the whole conservative movement.

He is, of course, entitled to his opinions and has every right to express them. However, he often draws conclusions from circumstances rather than facts, even when the facts are available to him. Those who base their judgments on facts, thereby disagreeing with him, are called '*comsymps*', '*conscious agents*' or outright communists.

In closing, I would point out that my own record of conservatism has been tested under pressure in the United States Senate. Responsible conservative groups such as the Americans For Constitutional Action and others have rated me 100% conservative by my voting record. In contrast, Mr. Welch has no such record of public service on which to evaluate his leadership."

Richard Nixon (*Centralia WA Daily Chronicle*, "*Nixon Speaks Out*", 3/16/62, p1)

"The irresponsible tactics of Robert Welch and others like him have hurt the fight against communism."

Richard Nixon (*Hayward CA Daily Review*, Associated Press, "*Nixon Endorsed, Birch Issue Fought*", 3/5/62, p1)

Nixon told California Republican Assembly: "It is essential that Republicans disassociate themselves from any organizations whose members are required to take dictation from a man who has attacked President Eisenhower as a '*dedicated conscious agent of the Communist conspiracy*'."

Sen. Thomas Dodd-CT — Vice Chairman, U.S. Senate Internal Security Subcommittee

(*Philadelphia Inquirer*, 3/31/61, p1, "*Birch Probe Asked*")

"To accuse people like President Eisenhower and John Foster Dulles of being Communist agents is an affront to both decency and intelligence."

Sen. Thomas Dodd-CT (*Oakland CA Tribune*, 1/31/61, p1: "Dodd Levels Blast At Mosk Charges" Dodd remarks to press when he was featured speaker at Fred Schwarz's Bay Region School of Anti-Communism):

I'm not an extremist. I was one of the first to criticize the John Birch Society and other crackpots and nuts on the extreme right. They are a nuisance."

Sen. Thomas J. Dodd-CT (*Congressional Record*, 9/20/65, p23594-23595: "How The JBS Abets The Communists")

"[The] John Birch Society has been a real windfall to the Communist conspiracy because it provides them with a convenient caricature of anti-communism which they skillfully exploit to encourage the spread of anti-anti-communism. Despite the anti-Communist intention of those who have joined the Society, the Society in terms of its objective impact, must be put down as an unwitting abettor of the Communist conspiracy."

Sen. Thruston Morton-KY: "There are three organizations in this country which give me grave doubts as a citizen: the CPUSA, the KKK and the JBS...What really concerns me is that a secret society should threaten and attempt to destroy one of our two great political parties. The Birchites label Gen. Dwight Eisenhower as a Communist sympathizer...I don't think we have any room in the Republican Party for a clandestine organization engaged in character assassination."

John F. McManus (*National Review*, 3/13/62 — before he joined the JBS)

"May I suggest that you reprint your editorial (critical of JBS) in pamphlet form so that I may let others see that Welch and conservatism are not synonymous."

Gen. Albert C. Wedemeyer (*Washington DC Evening Star*, 4/11/61, pA5, "Wedemeyer Hits Welch's Birch Story"):

"General Albert C. Wedemeyer has refused to join the John Birch Society and has accused its founder, Robert H.W. Welch Jr., of distorting the circumstances surrounding the death of the Society's namesake, according to a North American Newspaper Alliance report.

As Mr. Welch tells the story, John Birch, a missionary turned Army intelligence officer, was killed by Chinese Communists 10 days after the end of World War II. He has described him as '*the first casualty*' of the cold war and has charged the Pentagon with attempting to suppress the facts of the Birch case at the behest of hidden pro-Soviet forces.

'*That just isn't true*' says Gen. Wedemeyer, who was the American commander in China at the time of Birch's death. '*I just can't believe that the case was hushed up. I had sent a full report to Washington at the time. As I recall, I reported that the unfortunate episode had been provoked by Birch's arrogant behavior toward a Communist patrol.*'

"General Wedemeyer said Birch '*was only one of a number of brave courageous Americans who were killed in one incident or another about the same time. Why Birch should have been singled out for special attention is beyond my comprehension.*' "

General Albert Wedemeyer (*Newsweek*, 12/4/61)

"I knew John Birch, as a captain in China, when I was out there during the war. Birch was one of a number of men who participated in operations in China, parachuted behind enemy lines. He provoked the attack on himself; he was arrogant. I warned Welch not to make a hero of Birch. That's why I quit as an adviser. I think Welch is a dedicated, fine American but he lacks good judgment."

William F. Buckley Jr. column 3/2/66:

"Those of you who read JBS literature should bear in mind that the most responsible anti-communist conservatives in the United States, for instance, Sen. Goldwater, Sen. Tower, Russell Kirk, James Jackson Kilpatrick, J. Edgar Hoover have bemoaned the society's intellectually and morally crippling excesses."

Fred Schwarz, Christian Anti-Communism Crusade, as reported in *Sacramento CA Union*, 5/15/63, p1 "*Schwarz Takes Slap At Birchers*":

Schwarz described the JBS aim of impeaching Chief Justice Earl Warren as "*entirely irrelevant*" and he characterized Robert Welch's assertions about President Eisenhower as "*ridiculous*". Schwarz "*said he believes Eisenhower and Warren both are 'very patriotic gentlemen'.*"

Milorad Draskovich - former JBS National Council member - on *Firing Line* TV program 1/8/67 - (transcript #82, p18-19) answering William F. Buckley's question: "*But at this point, do you think the JBS is not worth preserving presumably?*":

"Exactly, exactly. Because it has been transformed into a Robert Welch Society. It is no longer John Birch - it's Robert Welch."

Max Rafferty - California State Superintendent of Public Instruction and prominent syndicated conservative columnist quoted in *Sacramento CA Union*, 5/15/63 article, "*Bircher Tactics Assailed By State Leaders*": "I made my position very clear condemning the John Birch Society and other organizations like it in the statement given especially to the *Sacramento Union* last spring. I repeat and endorse what I said, namely, I do not solicit nor accept Birch support...I am opposed in principle to any society which operates secretly in an attempt to influence national policy" and "Rafferty said he does not agree that men of the national stature of President Eisenhower and Chief Justice Earl Warren are Communists or Communist sympathizers. 'And I deplore the fact that anyone would so slander them.'"

Pat Buchanan re JBS/Welch on President Eisenhower (*Washington Post*, 9/13/2000, pC1)

"My own view is that he was an excellent president, second only to Ronald Reagan since World War II."

Pat Buchanan, on MSNBC "*Hardball*", 10/17/08, (hosted by Chris Matthews) responding to Matthews' characterization of the attacks on Obama for his connection to William Ayers as "*guilt by association*". Buchanan stated that since Ayers has not apologized and has "*lots of seedy friends*", Obama should not have associated with Ayers. Buchanan then described a comparable situation, on the other side of the political spectrum, if he (Buchanan) was associated with "*the Klan or Birch Society*".

<http://www.msnbc.msn.com/id/21134540/vp/27243729#27243729> (at 10:05 of 11:05 minute discussion)

Ayn Rand (Alvin Toffler: "Playboy Interview, Ayn Rand", 03/64, pp 35-43)

"I consider the Birch Society futile, because they are not for capitalism, but merely against communism. I gather they believe that the disastrous state of today's world is caused by a communist conspiracy. This is childishly naive and superficial. No country can be destroyed by a mere conspiracy, it can be destroyed only by ideas. The Birchers seem to be either nonintellectual or anti-intellectual. They do not attach importance to ideas. They do not realize that the great battle in the world today is a philosophical, ideological conflict."

William Loeb (ultra-conservative publisher of *Manchester NH Union-Leader* -- January 1972 editorial comment about Robert Welch):

"He's a bloody nut."

William Loeb - additional comments

"[We] resent the fact that Welch attributes every setback in U.S. foreign policy to subversive influences—whether he can prove his charges or not—and allows no room at all for human error." [*Manchester NH Union-Leader*, 2/16/62]

"If anything ever illustrated why the John Birch Society would be much better off without its founder, Robert Welch, it was Welch's recent statement...to the effect that Cuba's Batista and Dominica's Trujillo were all

right. Apparently, in Welch's way of thinking, because both Batista and Trujillo were against Communists, that makes them good men. This is nonsense." [Manchester NH Union-Leader, 2/27/62]

"These silly remarks...are typical of the sort of thing which have discredited Welch in the eyes of many sensible Americans. His remarks have also laid his organization and his friends open to effective attack by the Communists and left wingers. IT IS INDEED TIME FOR WELCH TO RETIRE." [Manchester NH Union-Leader, 2/27/62; caps in original.]

Ronald Reagan (10/28/66 at Commonwealth Club - San Francisco, when asked about Robert Welch:

"I think his statements about President Eisenhower are thoroughly reprehensible."

Ronald Reagan (Hayward CA Daily Review, "Reagan Rips Birchers", 9/25/65, p6 - on Robert Welch):

"I am in great disagreement with much of what he says."

Ronald Reagan (Los Angeles Times, 9/5/66, p10)

"In my opinion those persons who are members of the John Birch Society have a decision to make concerning the reckless and imprudent statements of their leader, Robert Welch."

Roy Cohn in New York Times, 5/15/82, p47 "Roy Cohn Joins Board of Anti-Communist Group" reports that Cohn said that "he has always opposed the Birch Society" and would only join the Board of Western Goals, Inc. "after satisfying himself that Western Goals, Inc...has no ties to the right-wing John Birch Society."

Tom Davis former JBS East Coast Public Relations Director: Excerpts from January 1967 Barry Farber [BF] radio program interview of Tom Davis [TD], [Reported in IAD Homefront newsletter, 12/67, p3]

BF: Asked Tom if the only reason he left JBS was because, as he claimed, he has 7 children and needed to earn more money

TD: "Barry, I will say this, that the Society's policy which was enunciated in its monthly *Bulletin*...did not always say things they way I thought they ought to be said. Let me give you an example...There was a *Bulletin* of the Society several years ago in which we said, the Society said, 'the government of the United States of America is under the operational control of the Communists'. That's a pretty specific, a pretty bold, a pretty daring statement. And a very difficult statement to present to an American population. It is not really on a day-to-day basis following what is going on.

BF: "Do you agree?"

TD: "Uh...no, I don't agree."

BF: Asks Davis about Welch's claim that the civil rights movement was a Communist plot.

TD: "Yes, which I think that was unfortunately said by Mr .Welch. Again, let me say I have been very close to him. I know the man well. I know his thinking on the subject of the civil rights movement. I know that Mr. Welch feels that the Communists were perhaps totally responsible for instigating the trouble which exists in our southern states today, and we might say all over the country, to the degree that he believes that, I disagree with him...I think it was an example of his saying something in a way which was not salable to the American people. It was salable to Birchers because Birchers generally agreed with him anyway."

William Norman Grigg, former Senior Editor of the JBS magazine, *The New American* (explaining why he was fired) in 4/18/09 message posted on newstalgia.crooksandliars.com:

<http://newstalgia.crooksandliars.com/gordonskene/flying-under-radar-john-birch-society>

"The individual who was fired was Yours Truly, former TNA Senior Editor William Grigg.

This happened a year after the nasty "leadership" dispute, and shortly after the resolution of a couple of lawsuits that grew out of that conflict. I notice that the main article here links to the "Freedom First Society" in Colorado for biographical information about Robert Welch. The FFS is a rump organization headed by former JBS CEO Vance Smith, who was forced out in 2005, almost exactly a year before I was kicked to the curb.

During the 2005 conflict, Vance Smith and his allies sought to capitalize on the fact that Jack McManus, the current JBS President (at the time, president emeritus and Council member) had given a number of blatantly, brazenly anti-Semitic speeches to schismatic Catholic groups.

Audio and video recordings of those speeches had been made and marketed, and excerpts of some of the worst elements were compiled into a kind of highlight reel for use by Vance's faction in lobbying various people, including myself.

I was furious with Jack; I'd known he was capable of saying some really vicious things (he once referred to AEI's Ben Wattenberg, who had interviewed Jack on the radio, as a "*slimy New York Jew*"; I about collapsed from shock), but my position is that one's internal prejudices are his own affair. (As an American of Mexican ancestry I apply that principle in dealing with anti-Latino prejudice as well). When I learned that Jack, for years, had been making speeches of that kind, my reaction was a mixture of rage and weary disgust.

But I was just as disgusted with what amounted to an effort by Vance and Company to blackmail Jack into supporting Vance's effort to retain his position. Two of Vance's allies threatened to take the Jack McManus anti-Jewish "highlight reel" to Morris Dees and Larry King.

So, I resigned. I really couldn't imagine staying with the organization if Vance's blackmail effort succeeded. And I wasn't nuts about sticking around if Jack ended up regaining his position as president, given both his bizarre prejudices and his complete lack of discipline and judgment.

After Vance was forced out, Jack McManus called me and personally urged me to rejoin the staff, if only to provide a sense of continuity to members and employees. I did so.

And a year later, Jack was one of four people who agreed to throw me and my family under the bus. This group included three people for whom I had risked my job a year earlier.

The pretext for canning me was that my after-hours, personal blog contained material that 1) was considered offensive by some Mormon JBS members (which was written in the context of Mitt Romney's candidacy); and 2) had potentially libelous material that exposed the Society to a potential lawsuit (a piece of genuinely paranoid speculation without a particle of merit).

The obvious irony here is that the current JBS President actually exposed the organization to *blackmail* by carrying on a years-long part-time crusade against the "*Jewish menace*." When that was discovered back in 2000-2001, Jack (who was already receiving Social Security) wasn't fired; he was removed as President, given a pay cut, and put on the JBS Council.

That's pretty gentle treatment compared to what was done to me. I have a family of six children and an invalid, frequently hospitalized wife for whom I'm the primary in-home caretaker; this has been the case since about May of 2006. At the time I was fired I was putting in 60-hour weeks, and regularly receiving plaudits for the volume and quality of my work. Yet the course of a single weekend I went from star employee to pariah for reasons never honestly explained to me or anybody else.

I'm hardly the first or only JBS employee to be treated this way; the organization has a long-lived and eminently justified reputation for treating its employees very badly, and attacking, in cult-like fashion, the character of those who depart on less-than-favorable terms (this happened to me, but the scope of the defamation was limited by my ability to use the blogosphere to publicize the truth about what was done to me).

Whatever one thinks of the views of the JBS, there are thousands of genuinely decent, public-minded people who join in the belief that doing so will help save/rescue/restore constitutional government.

There was a time a few years ago when I hoped the JBS would embrace a trans-partisan view, working with

people of goodwill across the spectrum to restore the Bill of Rights, end the Iraq war, and oppose corporate welfare (to name just three issues with trans-partisan appeal). But the present upper management -- which is concerned ONLY with preserving the revenue stream that supports their sinecures -- considers it to be more profitable to play to the Limbaugh/Hannity/Beck/O'Reilly faction than to stand for constitutional principles."

Gary Allen, former writer for JBS magazine, *American Opinion*, [AO] in 8/19/95 letter addressed to "Dear Fellow Bircher" -- on the firing of Scott Stanley Jr., editor of AO and treatment of Mrs. Robert Welch:

"This month would have marked my 20th anniversary as a writer for *American Opinion*. During this time I have written over 200 articles for the magazine. The total word count is over two million. I never intended to be a journalist. I became one because I was mad as Hell about what was going on in the world. That is why I first became a Bircher and then, by circumstances, a journalist.

My writings have been well-received by Birchers because they knew I was telling the truth and not mincing any words. Well, it's time to tell some more truths. Unfortunately, this is the most unpalatable truth I have ever had to tell. But the fact is that our vehicle to preserve and regain our freedom and liberties has been stolen from us. And, it was an inside job. I am going to tell you things that you don't want to hear; things that will break your heart. But we can't hide from the truth. If we do, we are simply engaging in the same kind of fantasies as your typical slumbering citizen.

You know by now that AO has been ash-canned. Robert Welch must be spinning in his grave. He created AO as the ideological base and transmission belt for our movement. AO and *The Review of the News* are theoretically to be replaced by a hybrid whose name, *The New American*, is also used by the Social Democrats for their newspaper! An ideological journal and a newsmagazine don't mix very well, but that is not the point. The official line is that the magazines had low circulation and were losing money. This conveniently ignores the fact that Scott Stanley only produced the magazines. He was denied any voice in promotion although he certainly craved to see his creations get the promotion and circulation they deserved. He was promised repeatedly that marketing, subscription renewal policies and the like would be improved. These promises were never honored.

Before we go any further, let's get something straight. The official party line from Belmont will be that I wrote this letter because I am angry about Scott being fired. Guilty, but with an explanation. Yes, Scott Stanley is the closest friend I have on this earth. I couldn't love him more if we were genetic brothers.

The only people to whom I feel more loyalty are my family members. The survival of freedom and liberty for my children comes first. That is why this letter had to be written.

You have been told that Scott '*resigned*'. That is about 10% truth and 90% falsehood. Scott was, for all intents and purposes, fired. This is what really happened: Barker told Scott that he had to desist from making speeches to raise money for Kathy McDonald's court defense against the vicious ACLU; that doing so was '*competition*' with the Society. (Barker has said '*What has Kathy McDonald done for the Society lately?*'). Scott told him that his conscience would not allow him to throw Larry's widow and babies to the wolves. Barker replied that if this was Scott's attitude, he should resign. The Barker Gang obviously saw Scott with all his creativity as a threat to their reign. They wanted him out, gone. So they created circumstances under which no man of honor could stay on. That is the real story of how Scott '*resigned*'.

There was never a thank you for 25 years of sweat, blood, and total dedication. Not a single friend of Scott's (outside his staff and writers) even called to express their appreciation. Unbelievable! Barker then fired Lee Clark, Scott's brilliant associate editor of nearly 20 years.

Scott's loyal staff has left virtually en masse. Gone are associate editors Bill Hoar, Jim Graves and editorial assistant Julie Harding. Gone are key writers John Rees, Alan Stang, Sue Huck, Medford Evans, and Gary Allen.

The new editor of *The Review of the News* is Jack McManus. Jack is fairly glib orally, but he is no journalist. His assistant has done most of the writing for *The Birch Log*. There is a big difference between turning out a single-sheet commentary and putting out a weekly newsmagazine. ...

The only thing crueler than the way Scott was treated was the absolutely despicable way Mrs. Welch was

treated. The Barker Gang's line on this one is that Mrs. Welch retired because of age. Another lie. She was rudely treated and was shoved out. Can you believe that? Call her and ask her about it ...

About the lowest, most vulgar stunt I've ever heard of was when John McManus slithered into Mrs. Welch's office just two days after Mr. Welch's death to gloat to her that her husband had converted to Feeneyite Catholicism on his deathbed, after having taken instructions in the faith. This is a damnable lie. During the last months of his life he didn't even recognize his wife most of the time. He couldn't take instructions in anything. You may think this stunt is beneath contempt, but I have a lot of contempt for it.

The Feeneyites believe the Pope, whom the KGB tried to assassinate, is a Communist and that all non-Feeneyites are going to Hell. Outside of Tom Hill and Barker, this cult virtually runs Belmont. If the general membership ever found out about Feeneyite control of the Belmont bureaucracy, there would be revolt in the ranks. ...

Incidentally, Mr. Welch paid for the upkeep and maintenance of his home with royalties from *The Blue Book* and *The Politician*. Barker has told Mrs. Welch that this policy has been cancelled. Robert Welch put every cent he had into the fight. There is no estate to speak of other than the house. Mrs. Welch, after everything else she has suffered, has been forced to put that house up for sale."

Who is A. Clifford Barker, anyway? Nobody knows this guy. Barker became the head of the Society not because he was chosen, but because he volunteered. The Belmont line is that he took over the Society at great personal sacrifice. Well, he did have to give up his welfare check. You see, he had filed bankruptcy. His board of directors threw him out after his company had gone broke doing government defense contracts. I thought that was impossible. It was after the bankruptcy that Sperry-Rand stepped in and took over the debacle. That is the true story behind Barker's great sacrifice, despite the baloney being peddled from Belmont...The truth is that Barker is a consummate liar. What are his motivations? I don't know. Some think he was sent in to deliberately destroy the Society. John Rees contends that if this were true, he would be more subtle about it. What can be done about Barker, 'The Destroyer'? I don't know. I don't know if anything can be done. That is up to YOU. I only know that, as Burke observed, all that is necessary for evil to triumph is for good men to do nothing. Sincerely, Gary Allen."

California State Senator Hugh M. Burns (former Chairman of the California Senate Fact-Finding Subcommittee on Un-American Activities) when asked about the JBS in 1963, described it as follows [Quotes appear in Galal Kernahan article "*Conservative Draws Birch Wrath*", published in *The Dixon Line* newsletter, (La Habra CA) 2/16/65, p7]

"...an extremist group, and, like extremist groups from time immemorial, plagues our country. Extremists from the Know-Nothings on have served no useful purpose."

When asked about the 1963 Report of his Senate Subcommittee which Birchers always cite as "*clearing*" the JBS, Burns replied:

"As I have stated before, the report is highly critical of Robert Welch, making mention of his historical ignorance, his belonging to an organization started by Fabian Socialists, his organizing the Society along Communist lines, and his extreme statements against distinguished Americans. Since the report was first prepared, other information has been brought to our attention, which material --- until further investigated and reported --- makes highly undesirable and improper any use of the subcommittee's name for seeming exoneration of the John Birch Society."

Msgr Francis W. Carney, President of National Catholic Adult Education Commission, 02/62 described the JBS as...

"wholly antagonistic to Catholic social philosophy. Those Catholics in the Society should start reading Pope John's encyclical *Mater et Magistra* and throw out the *Blue Book*."

James Jackson Kilpatrick, editor of the *Richmond VA News Leader* and a prominent syndicated conservative columnist and an official of the Virginia Commission on Constitutional Government described the JBS as "**a bunch of nuts**" [quoted in Hugh V. White Jr. to Mills E. Godwin Jr., March 13, 1961, Box 1, Mills E. Godwin Jr. Papers (Manuscripts and Rare Books Department, Earl Gregg Swem Library, College of William and Mary,

Williamsburg, VA]

Kilpatrick also observed that there was "always some madness" in Birchers. "They always had to go the mile beyond into wacky areas. They were kind of bit by the conspiratorial bug. They destroyed themselves by their extremism." [*Los Angeles Times*, 11/2/85, page 1]

Ray Bliss (former GOP National Chairman):

"Honest, patriotic and conscientious conservatives may be misjudged because of irresponsible radicals such as Robert Welch."

George F. Will column 8/24/05 — comparing JBS to Cindy Sheehan:

"In the 1960s, just as conservatism was beginning to grow from a fringe tendency into what it has become — the nation's most potent persuasion — it was threatened by a boarding party of people not much, if any, loonier than Sheehan. The John Birch Society, whose catechism included the novel tenet that Dwight Eisenhower was an agent of the Kremlin, was not numerous — its membership probably never numbered more than 100,000 — but its power to taint all of conservatism was huge, particularly given the media's eagerness to abet the tainting. Responsible conservatives, especially William F. Buckley and his *National Review*, repelled the boarders, driving them into the dark cave where, today, they ferociously guard the secret of their size from a nation no longer curious about it."

MY RESEARCH EMAIL:

Documentary History of
the John Birch Society

[Sitemap](#)

[Recent site activity](#)

Documentary History of the John Birch Society

CHAPTER 9

JBS DOCUMENTS...rev. 05/17/14

This chapter will be devoted to JBS-related documents which generally have never been publicly available prior to now. I will scan and post copies of some of the more historically important or interesting documents.

The documents originate from a variety of sources including Special Collections of personal papers archived at college/university libraries and state historical societies as well as private correspondence by current and former JBS officials and members.

It should be noted that the Birch Society does not allow outside independent researchers or scholars to have access to its archives for historical research purposes. In addition, during its formative period, the Birch Society deliberately avoided publicity and it often was hostile toward media attention. Consequently, much of JBS history (particularly its internal disputes and documents concerning its policy-making decisions) has never been publicly available.

Like the Communist Party, the JBS wants to control the substance of whatever narrative is written about itself.

“Fact” (from the JBS perspective) consists of data which it believes reflects favorably upon its membership, activities, and objectives. Adverse or inconvenient information is suppressed or de-valued in order to manipulate readers into believing the most positive perceptions about itself as an “educational” organization.

What follows will generally be in chronological order.

1958

September 1958

Before the Birch Society was founded, Robert Welch sent copies of his book-length “*private letter*” entitled *The Politician*, to numerous individuals whom he thought could be persuaded about the accuracy of its theme that President Eisenhower was a Communist traitor. Copied below is one such letter.

AMERICAN OPINION
An Informal Review

Belmont 78, Massachusetts
September 29, 1958

Mr. T. Coleman Andrews
6 Iris Lane
Richmond 26, Virginia

Dear Mr. Andrews:

Under separate cover today, I am sending you by registered first-class mail, return receipt requested, copy of an extremely confidential document.

This manuscript is not intended for publication at all. But I am putting it into the hands of a limited number of good friends and outstanding patriots, who can be depended on to treat it with the confidence requested, and to take reasonable precautions to safeguard the document while it is in their possession. And I do believe that it will give even so well informed a man as yourself a certain amount of additional insight into some aspects of the conspiracy which we face.

With all good wishes, I am

Sincerely,
Robert Welch
Robert Welch

DW:amst

Robert Welch (and his friends) were acutely aware of the damage that his comments about Eisenhower would have if they became publicly known. For example, in a letter to J.W. Clise of Seattle, Welch wrote:

"Our rather extreme precautions with regard to this document are not due to any worry on my part as to what might happen to myself...But many of my best informed friends feel that having the manuscript get into the wrong hands at the present time might do far more damage than good to the whole anti-Communist cause; whereas, by distributing it very carefully and quietly to quite a limited number of strongly patriotic leaders, so that the information in this document becomes a background to their own thinking on which their own actions are determined it can do considerable good." [2/25/59 letter to J.W. Clise, Seattle WA].

October 1958

Robert Welch asked 12 men to attend a meeting at the home of Miss Marguerite Dice of 3650 Washington Blvd in Indianapolis on Monday and Tuesday, December 8 and 9, 1958. Dice was the National Vice-Chairman of Minute Women of the U.S.A., Inc.

An example of Welch's invitation and subsequent instructions are copied below. In this two-day meeting Welch explained his proposal for creation of the John Birch Society.

AMERICAN OPINION
An Informal Review

Belmont 78, Massachusetts
October 27, 1958

Mr. T. Coleman Andrews
6 Iris Lane
Richmond 26, Virginia

Dear Mr. Andrews:

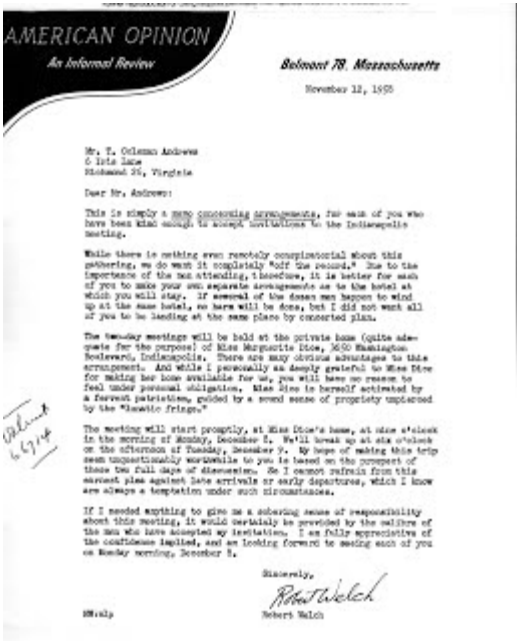
Would you be able and willing to meet with about ten other men, all from different parts of the nation, in Indianapolis on Monday, December 8 and Tuesday, December 9?

Except for myself, they are all men of well recognized stature, unshakable integrity, proved ability, and fervent patriotism. The meeting will be completely "off the record" -- you will simply be in Indianapolis, or just in the Midwest, on business. And since there is no way I can tell you of the ideas which I hope to see thoroughly discussed there, without writing volumes, you will have to take for granted that I would not ask such busy men to give up two whole days in this way unless I thought it would be worthwhile.

You are the only one of the group whom I am inviting whom I have never met personally. But not only do I know enough about your patriotic activities and outlook to feel justified in asking you to attend, but a good friend of yours -- and mine -- Bill Kent, who will be there, has strongly urged me to see if you will not join the group. So I hope very much you will say yes.

Sincerely,
Robert Welch
Robert Welch

DW:amst



Eleven men accepted the invitation. The 11 are listed below. The asterisked names are the men who later accepted positions on the JBS National Council.

- *T. Coleman Andrews (Richmond VA)
- *Laurence E. Bunker (Wellesley Hills MA)
- *William J. Grede (Milwaukee WI)
- William R. Kent (Memphis TN)
- *Fred C. Koch (Wichita KS)
- *W.B. McMillan (St. Louis, MO) – McMillan was the first person to become a JBS member after founder Robert Welch
- *Revilo P. Oliver (Urbana IL)
- *Louis Ruthenburg (Evansville IN)
- Fitzhugh Scott, Jr. (Milwaukee, WI)
- *Robert W. Stoddard (Worcester, MA)
- *Ernest W. Swigert (Portland OR)

December 1958

The first official document generated as a result of the Indianapolis meeting probably was “*Confidential Report No. 1*” dated 12/19/58 – which is copied below. On page 2 of the report, Mr. Welch states that Bill Grede and Fitzhugh Scott will be scheduling the first 2-day “*top level*” recruitment meeting conducted by Welch during January 1959 in Milwaukee. “*The second will be in Florida after the NAM board meeting. And I shall ask other members of our Indianapolis group to help me with similar meetings as fast as I can get to them.*”

Note: It was Welch’s 2-day presentation in Milwaukee (January 1959) which resulted in the FBI’s Milwaukee field office learning about the existence of the John Birch Society and then advising FBI HQ in Washington DC.

Mr. Welch also stated that “*Incorporation of the JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY under Chapter 180 of the General Laws of Massachusetts with all of the powers given to non-profit corporations by that Chapter, is now under way. I have obtained signatures from all seven of the incorporators required by law, the first meeting of incorporators is being held this afternoon, and the attorney says we can expect our charter by next Wednesday, December 24.*”

The John Birch Society was officially founded at Indianapolis on December 9, 1958. Its first member, besides the founder, was W. B. McMillan. Others have come in since. As there will be no local chapters before January, and none in most of the areas represented by the men at Indianapolis for some time thereafter, all members are being enrolled temporarily in the Home Chapter.

Our first specific undertaking is formation of the "front," a Committee To Protest The Firing Of Medford Evans. This is being handled by, and most of the work done by, Dr. Revilo P. Oliver. Although Dr. Oliver, as one of the very top scholars in the United States in his field of classical languages and literatures, is fairly safe in his position as a full professor at the University of Illinois, he is still taking some risk. From long and deep study of the Communist conspiracy in operation, especially as he has observed it in the academic world, Dr. Oliver is convinced that unless we can accomplish enough to slow down and eventually reverse the forces at work, within five years it will make little difference whether he has a professorship anywhere or not. He not only is willing to take the present risk, therefore, but was so completely sold on our program that he is giving up extra income he was earning by "outside" writing to put all of the time and effort he can spare into volunteer work for THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY.

Medford Evans not only has consented to our plan in this connection, but is enthusiastic about it. He is preparing for us a detailed record of the case, of which we shall make initial copies simply on an office duplicator. These will be used by Dr. Oliver, to accompany his letters, in obtaining members of the Committee for letterhead and other purposes. We expect to have educators and educational administrators of recognized standing as about sixty or seventy-five percent of the publicized Committee; men from other vocations for the remainder. Once we have the consents to serve on this Committee, to justify the letterhead, we shall begin a mailing of letters of protest, accompanied by the printed background record, to conservative newspapers, college presidents of all ideological shades, and to other appropriate groups and individuals.

This "front" is something which is badly needed, and at once. There are hundreds of professors "on our side," in different colleges throughout the country, who are right now on a precipice. By posting this "beware" sign in front of deans and presidents who are about to push them over, we can, I believe, save many of them. The Committee To Protest The Firing Of Medford Evans is certainly not going to have any great substantive effect

upon the tremendous general movement to the Left in our educational world. But it can serve a role of "the star of David" over the JBS's and some of the anti-Communist college presidents who, not Medford Evans, are too opportunistic to have any backbone. It can give the thousands of conservatives who will remain on the fence backbone or more courage than the United States is willing to give them. It can give the thousands of people in the, and a feeling of a certain amount of collective strength if they are willing to support each other.

We have no other "front" which we have already taken steps to get started. We shall give you more information about these later.

We expect to have our first Committee holding local all-day meetings early in January, working members who will go to work immediately with energy and dedication, in spite of the fact that we have not accomplished anything worth while. Of the 100 top-level meetings which I shall conduct myself, Bill Greer and Pittsburgh Bank are setting up the first one for me in Milwaukee in January. The second will be in Florida in February, immediately after the third local meeting. And I shall ask other members of our Indianapolis group to help me with similar meetings so that we can get to them.

In that connection there is enclosed the tentative draft of a memorandum which may be helpful to all of us in getting the right men to give us their time for each meeting. If each of the figures named will let me know whether this is or is not all right with him, it will be appreciated.

There is also enclosed a copy of my first quick draft of a memorandum, suggested by Catherine Johnson, to be used in connecting the meeting. "Who was John Birch?" It should be able to improve data, usually in physical appearance, but probably in content, as we go along.

Incorporation of THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY under Chapter 106 of the General Laws of Massachusetts, with all of the papers given to non-profit corporations by that Chapter, is now under way. I have obtained signatures from all seven of the incorporators required by law. The first meeting of incorporators is being held this afternoon, and the officers will be elected and our charter by next Wednesday, December 24.

The magazine is as part of the direct success of THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY. But I think you may be interested in this point of information. Just within the week we have received a request from a Colorado newspaper to reprint in full the article by Medford Evans. "How January Should Mean Letters To Bank." It was December 1958, a request from the "The United States Bank, Inc." to reprint all of our article. "All the Money

It's right," from the November issue, in pamphlet form for distribution to their reading rooms to libraries throughout the country; and a request from Edgar Snoddy's Church League Of America to reprint our book review of Merrill Root's "Revolutions In The High Schools," from the November issue, as leaflets for distribution to his thousands of their subscribers. We believe that already we are being reprinted more times than any other magazine of our size in America. It's all really good! A larger circulation list, at the end of AMERICAN CHRISTIAN, three years, all signs are encouraging.

Have a Merry Christmas! and let's try to see that America, at least, can keep on having Merry Christmases for a long time to come.

Robert Welch

12/23/58 = The JBS was incorporated as a non-profit business organization in Massachusetts and was assigned Charter Number 624-300. The officers were listed as Robert Welch (President) and Treasurer, Ellen M. Lovett (Clerk/Secretary). The Directors listed were Mary M. White, Robert Welch, and Ellen M. Lovett. The incorporators were listed as Robert Welch, Marian Probert Welch (wife of Robert), Ellen M. Lovett, Mary M. White, Ellen Douglas Snow aka Mrs. Stanley Carman Snow, Philip L. Jenkins, and Juliette D. Guild. The aims and purposes of the JBS were listed as promoting civic interest in national and international affairs by an educational program and the collection and dissemination of literature for educational purposes.

1959

1/7/59 = Robert Welch sent T. Coleman Andrews a 4-page letter advising Andrews that Welch met with an "intermediate" group of 44 people in Massachusetts (above chapter level but one level down from "top level" individuals such as met in Indianapolis) and he received an enthusiastic response to his presentation.

Welch then asked Andrews to consider becoming Chairman of a project to be named "The Movement To Impeach Earl Warren" which would seek signatures on an impeachment petition because "Warren has definitely violated the oath of office which he took when he became Chief Justice..."

Welch also asked Andrews to take the lead in creation of one or more JBS chapters in Richmond VA which "could take as its very first project...all of the work and correspondence and organizational details involved there in Richmond in setting up this movement and getting it under way all over the country."

Welch observed that: “Frankly, with the Left Wing control now so strong, insidious and ubiquitous in Washington, I am not deceiving myself that we have very much chance of really bringing about the impeachment of Earl Warren. Although we might. But, I don’t think that is really as important as dramatizing to the whole country where he stands, where the Supreme Court as now constituted under him stands, and how important it is to face the facts about the road we are now traveling so fast.”

Andrews declined Welch’s invitation to become Chairman by letter dated 1/14/59 due to other time-consuming commitments. Andrews also told Welch that he believed “that there is a strong likelihood that blood is going to flow before the integration question is settled.”

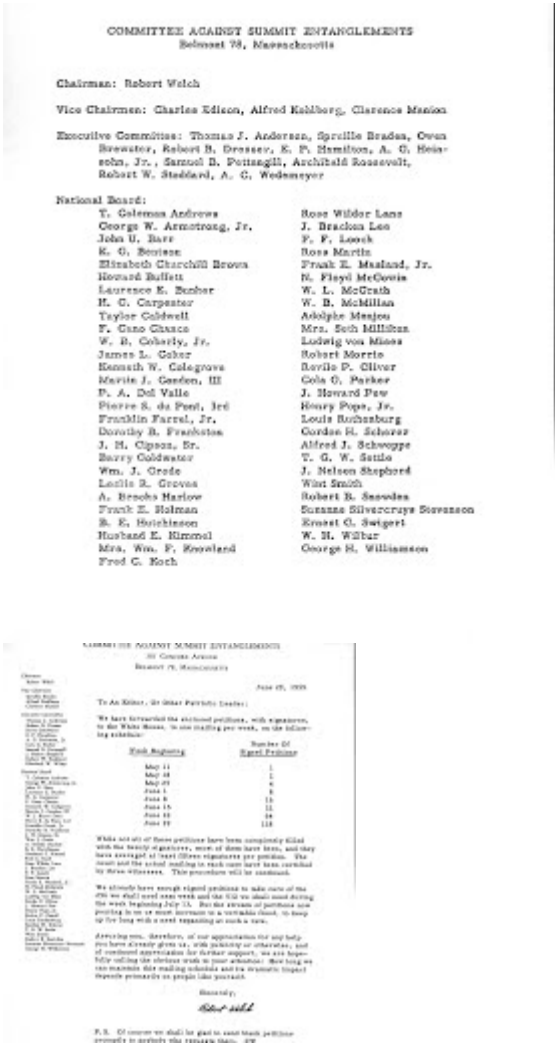
Welch’s 1/23/59 reply to Andrews is copied below. It also reveals some details concerning JBS recruitment success in Milwaukee and Boston.



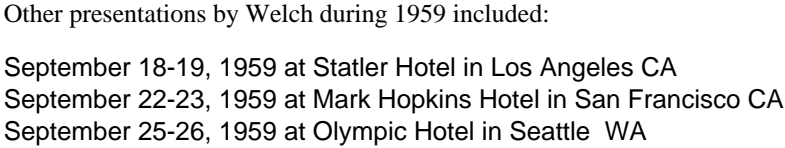
3/30/59 = Welch advises Coleman Andrews that: “We now have ten chapters actually working in Greater Boston, three in Florida, one in Michigan and many more in process of formation in those and other states. And we have quite a number of Home Chapter members who are contributing time and effort and executive ability, as well as money, to our growing activities.”

05/59 = Another Birch Society project [CASE = Committee Against Summit Entanglements] was able to secure the support of numerous prominent conservatives---including many whom, in later years, would reject the Birch Society and Robert Welch for their extremism and irresponsibility. CASE endorses list copied below. CASE opposed President Eisenhower's proposal for a summit meeting with Soviet Premier Nikita Khrushchev.

Starting in May 1959 and weekly thereafter, CASE sent letters to President Eisenhower accompanied by signed petitions. In June 1959, CASE sent 1634 signatures on 128 petitions. In addition, CASE sent a copy of their letter to the editor of 2500 daily newspapers along with 400 other “opinion molders”.

[illegible]

During 1959, Welch traveled across the country to make these presentations. For example, his schedule included a presentation in January 1959 in Milwaukee and August 1959 in Chicago. Phyllis Schlafly and her husband, Fred, attended the Chicago meeting and she and her husband joined the Birch Society after listening to Welch. See her letter below.

[illegible][illegible]



1960

1/9/60 = The first meeting of the JBS National Council was held at the Union League Club, 65 W. Jackson Blvd., Chicago IL on Saturday, January 9, 1960. Five of those in attendance (William Grede, A.G. Heinsohn, Robert Stoddard, W.B. McMillan and Ernie Swigert) subsequently sent a letter dated 1/13/60 to all Council members asking for their financial support so that an assistant could be hired for Robert Welch.

It was at this first Council meeting that Robert Welch made some of his most controversial comments. For example:

"From a careful and realistic study of the mountainous pile of evidence that is there for all to see, certain terrifying conclusions are objectively inescapable. Among them are:

- (1) The Communists are winning their large victories, as they always have, through the cumulative effect of small gains;
- (2) They make these gains chiefly through the conniving assistance of many of the very diplomats and officials who are supposed to be opposing them;
- (3) Communist influences are now in almost complete working control of our government;
- (4) And hence, the United States Government is today, as it has been for many years, the most important and powerful single force promoting the world-wide Communist advance." *A Confidential Report To Members Of The COUNCIL of The John Birch Society* – minutes of 1/9/60 meeting held at Union League Club in Chicago IL, page 1-2; minutes signed by Robert Welch.]

Furthermore:

"Today, gentlemen, I can assure you, without the slightest doubt in my own mind, that the takeover at the top is, for all practical purposes, virtually complete. Whether you like it or not, or whether you believe it or not, our Federal Government is already, literally in the hands of the Communists." (Ibid, page 2)

"In our two states with the largest population, New York and California...already the two present Governors are almost certainly actual Communists...Our Congress now contains a number of men like Adam Clayton Powell of New York and Charles Porter of Oregon, who are certainly actual Communists, and plenty more who are sympathetic to Communist purposes for either ideological or opportunistic reasons." (Ibid, page 7) (Note: the reference to Governors refers to Edmund G. Brown of California and Nelson Rockefeller of New York.)

"In the Senate, there are men like Stephen Young of Ohio, and Wayne Morse of Oregon, McNamara of Michigan, and Clifford Case of New Jersey and Hubert Humphrey of Minnesota and Estes Kefauver of Tennessee and John F. Kennedy of Massachusetts, whom it is utter folly to think of as just liberals. Every one of those men is either an actual Communist or so completely a Communist sympathizer or agent that it makes no practical difference..." (Ibid, page 8)

"Our Supreme Court, dominated by Earl Warren and Felix Frankfurter and Hugo Black, is so visibly pro-Communist that no argument is even needed...And our federal courts below that level...are in many cases just as bad." (Ibid, page 8)

"Our State Department is loaded with Communists from top to bottom, to the extent that our roll call of Ambassadors almost sounds like a list somebody has put together to start a Communist front." ... [Ibid, page 8]

"It is estimated from many reliable sources that from 70% to 90% of the responsible personnel in the Department of Health, Education, and Welfare are Communists."

Eight pages from the minutes of the above meeting are copied below:

[illegible][illegible][illegible][illegible][illegible]

2/10/60 = Edward P. Hamilton of Two Rivers, WI was added as a member of the JBS National Council. Hamilton was President of Hamilton Manufacturing Company and a former President of the Wisconsin Manufacturers Association.

The complete list of the first JBS National Council members is below. The asterisked names refer to individuals who ultimately

terminated their JBS membership---sometimes with caustic remarks about Robert Welch.

Dr. Nathaniel E. Adamson Jr.

Thomas J. Anderson

T. Coleman Andrews

John T. Beatty

*Spruille Braden

Col. Laurence E. Bunker

Ralph E. Davis

*Slobodan M. Draskovich

William J. Grede

Edward P. Hamilton

A.G. Heinsohn Jr. aka Heinie

*Dr. Granville F. Knight

*Fred C. Koch

Alfred Kohlberg [Kohlberg died in April 1960]

Clarence E. Manion

Frank E. Masland

William B. McMillan aka Ben McMillan

*Adolphe Menjou

*Revilo P. Oliver

Cola G. Parker

Louis Ruthenberg

James Simpson Jr.

Robert W. Stoddard

Lt. Gen. Charles B. Stone III (USAF, retired)

Ernest G. Swigert

4/2/60 = Robert Welch sent a 7-page document entitled “*A Confidential Report To Members Of The COUNCIL of The John Birch Society*” which reported financial and membership data.

Among the highlights in Welch’s Report:

- The JBS-front group, Committee Against Summit Entanglements, independently raised \$58,000 during 1959 and the JBS as a whole raised about \$200,000 from member dues, contributions, fees, and other income.
- “In a brief report of progress, your Founder was glad to be able to tell the Council that the Society had just about exactly doubled in size since the first meeting of the Council on January 9. This was in chapters, which had moved from approximately 75 in number to approximately 150; in members, from approximately 1400 to approximately 2800; and in the daily average of direct income. Such income received during the three months ending March 31, 1960 was approximately \$51,500. This is against a total of \$71,225.80 for the twelve months of 1959. Bank balance at the end of March 1960 was \$14,804.50; undeposited cash on hand, approximately \$1500 and value of 40 shares of Sunbeam Stock which had been received as a donation, approximately \$2200. Your Society now has one full-time salaried Coordinator each in New England, Michigan, Tennessee, Louisiana, Texas, Oregon, and two in California. It has Volunteer Coordinators each devoting an important part of his energy and time to the Society, in Wisconsin, Florida, Texas (4), California, and Washington.”
- “Despite our wish to avoid publicity all we can, there have been items or brief articles about The John Birch Society breaking out in the press recently in various papers all over the country—and elsewhere... But we know that as soon as the major media of communications in America learn enough about us and our activities, their treatment of The John Birch Society will – in all but a very few cases anyway – be anything but favorable. So, for this and many other reasons, we should like to have the help of our COUNCIL members in keeping general publicity about us to a minimum.”
- Welch discussed *The Dilling Bulletin* of October 1959 – published by Elizabeth Dilling. He mentioned the editorial he wrote about it in the December 1959 issue of the JBS monthly magazine, *American Opinion*. Welch described Dilling’s publication as “the monthly bulletin of one of the best-known ‘extremists’ on the anti-Communist side of the current ideological wars. That bulletin took your editor to pieces, mercilessly, on the grounds that his Committee Against Summit Entanglements consisted of ‘nothing but Jews and Jew-kissers.’ Welch observed: “You will find specific references to myself on pages 5, 6, 16, 18, and 19 of the *Dilling Bulletin*. But actually the whole issue is, to a considerable extent, an attack on me because of my support of Jacques Soustelle in France and Barry Goldwater in this country, both of whom are bêtes noires to Mrs. Dilling and her friends because they both happen to have Jewish blood in their ancestry (though both were born and raised in the Protestant church.”



4/13/60 = In a letter to Tom Anderson, Welch presented his argument that Gov. Orval Faubus of Arkansas was actually a Communist.



4/26/60 = M.T. Phelps became a JBS National Council member. Phelps was the Chief Justice of the Arizona Supreme Court.

5/3/60 = Robert Welch letter to FBI Director J. Edgar Hoover suggested that they meet. Welch wrote:

"There is nobody in this fight who has supported the FBI and yourself more unceasingly, uncompromisingly, or enthusiastically, and nobody who more firmly expects to keep right on doing so. When your book provoked a lot of grumbling, and even some loud and rabid dissent on the part of some of your former strong supporters, because of what they considered your too favorable attitude toward the NAACP and other organizations, I wrote many pages of letters to some of these people to calm them down -- the essence of which was that, whether you had leaned over too far backward to try to be fair in some of these cases or not, you had been for too many years and still were too great and too effective a patriot for any such withdrawal or lessening of moral support to be justified. And I am sure that you would find our treatment of *Masters of Deceit* in *American Opinion*, one of the most favorable which the book received. All of this, as I am sure you have surmised, is merely an introduction to saying that I should like very much to have a chance for at least a brief visit with you; and that I should be glad to go to Washington for that purpose, at any time which would be convenient for yourself...In the meantime, with my continuing admiration and kind regards, I am - Sincerely, Robert Welch."

5/17/60 = In a 3-page memo addressed "*To All Members of the COUNCIL*", Robert Welch made the following observations:

- Next National Council meeting scheduled for 6/18/60 in Chicago at Union League Club
- CASE (Committee Against Summit Entanglements) produced and mailed 600,000 postcards and "the editorial message on those cards was reprinted in full (as a letter to the editor, or as an actual editorial or otherwise) in papers with a total circulation of about three million..."
- "That the Communists, having decided on '*postponement*' would find some way to seize the initiative, twist appearances, save face and make it seem that the conference has been '*postponed*' for their reasons, was to be expected...And that our government would go through every necessary motion of designed '*blunders*' and self-abasement, to help the Soviets put over their play (whatever it might be), was as certain as that Washington will keep on subsidizing Castro."
- "Invitations are now going out to various influential conservatives all over the country to attend the twenty-fifth full two-day '*top level*' presentation of the background, methods, and purposes of our Society, also in Chicago, on June 24 and 25."

7/5/60 = Robert Welch memo "To Members of The COUNCIL" stated that "We have about 270 chapters and about 4300 members (including a few hundred Home Chapter members..." Welch announces two new members of the JBS National Council: N. Floyd McGowin, President of the W.T. Smith Lumber Company in Chapman, Alabama and Stilwell Jay Conner of Chicago. Conner formed the first JBS chapter in Chicago and was a major financial contributor to the JBS.

7/25-26/60 = The first newspaper articles by reporter Jack Mabley about the existence of Welch's "private letter", *The Politician*, are published in the *Chicago Daily News* at the precise time when the GOP National Convention is in Chicago to nominate their 1960 Presidential candidate. The publicity ignites a firestorm within Republican circles and nationally.



8/1/60 = Welch sent a letter to Chicago National Council member Slobodan Draskovich which explains how Welch perceived the adverse publicity concerning *The Politician*. Although Welch blames "the Left Wing" for trying "to damage the John Birch Society because of our growth and increasing effectiveness" – the actual culprit, as Welch later admitted, was someone whom he regarded as a major conservative anti-communist ally – Fred Schwarz, the leader of Christian Anti-Communism Crusade. See below for more details.

Welch's letter to Draskovich is copied below:

100 Haver Street, Cambridge
Belmont 76, Massachusetts

August 1, 1960

Doctor S. M. Draskovich
440 Barry Avenue
Chicago 14, Illinois

Dear Sam:

Thanks for your letter of July 29.

My own first reaction was to send a circular letter to our Co-ordinators and Chapter Leaders. And I had it practically written, to go into the mail last Friday. By that time I learned, however, of the forthcoming even more vicious attack on the Society, in the Milwaukee Journal. It was obvious that a "chain reaction" had been planned, with these "exposures" popping up in one city after another. Under these circumstances, therefore, I decided that I should deal with the whole matter in rather more detail, in the August bulletin, for the benefit of all of our members.

This I have done. The bulletin is being typed for the printer today, and tonight, and will go into the mail Wednesday. I hope you will like what I have had to say, and that it will be helpful to our members. Also, at the invitation of Bob Siegfried, I am going on his midnight program in Milwaukee -- I believe it runs from 11:00 P.M. to 1:00 A.M. -- Tuesday night, to correct some of the misstatements in both the Chicago Daily News and the Milwaukee Journal articles, especially one very important and complete misstatement made by the Milwaukee Journal; and to show -- as I do in the August bulletin -- that there is absolutely no basis in fact for trying my person and confidential manuscript, THE POLITICIAN, to the Society, or for trying to make the Society or its individual members responsible for my personal opinions expressed there, in any way.

Of course, the Left Wing has known all about this manuscript for two years. They have decided to use it now to try to damage the John Birch Society, because of our growth and increasing effectiveness. And while we cannot tell what the ultimate result will be, and anything may happen, as of now I believe that they have made a mistake, from their point of view. I think now that these attacks are going to strengthen the Society. But since I cover this point in the bulletin, I'll not belabor it here. I'll merely summarize by saying that the resignations, one whole week af-

Doctor S. M. Draskovich - 2 - August 1, 1960

ter the appearance of the Chicago articles, have been negligible, and have been more than balanced by new applications and increasing interest in the Society, on the part of people of good standing, due to these revelations of our effectiveness; and the reaffirmance of loyalty and support have given me tremendous encouragement and renewed inspiration for our task ahead.

As always, my kindest regards.

Sincerely,

Bob

RW:th Robert Welch

P. S. On second thought, and although this letter was simply dictated to the machine in a hurry, I have decided to have it duplicated and copies sent to each one of the other members of our COUNCIL. It is the easiest way I have, and the most practical one under the present pressures here, to let them have some word from me about what has taken place. RW

An example of the type of negative publicity which caused Welch so much grief after the publication of the first two articles by Jack Mabley in the *Chicago Daily News*, is the following subsequent UPI article which accurately summarized the content of *The Politician*:

CHICAGO SUN-TIMES, Mon, Aug. 1, 1960 15

Wisconsin Group Reportedly Views Ike As Red, Traitor

MILWAUKEE (UPI)—The Milwaukee Journal reported Sunday that a society which accuses President Eisenhower of treason and brand him a Communist has grown to 10 chapters in Wisconsin during the past year.

In a front-page article, written by Alvin P. Dubish, the Journal said 10 chapters of the John Birch Society now flourish in Milwaukee, Wausau, Green Bay, De Pere, Oshkosh, Appleton and Eagle River.

"The ostensible purpose of the society is to fight communism and influence American politics," the Journal said. "The members include such leading citizens as William J. Grodz, Milwaukee industrialist."

The founder of the society, according to the Journal, is Robert H. W. Welch Jr., 51, of Belmont, Mass., "a persuasive speaker, conservative and the author of 'The Politician.'"

Private Document

The book was described as a 300-page privately reproduced volume which Welch has sent to leaders of the society telling them it is strictly confidential and for your eyes only.

"It claims," the Journal said, "that Mr. Eisenhower's brother, Milton, is the President's superior in the party and that a dozen other highly placed government men are either outright Communists or tools of the party."

The book says former President Franklin D. Roosevelt was "deliberately used by the party," Ex-President Harry S. Truman was knowingly used and as far President Eisenhower, the Journal said Page 255 in the book said.

"In my opinion, the Communists have one of their own actually in the presidency. For this alone," the Journal said, "there is only one possible word to describe his purposes and actions. That word is treason."

Said 1,000,000 Members

The Journal said Richard Johnson, a Green Bay accountant, is in charge of organizing against Wisconsin activities. The Journal quoted Johnson as saying Welch's goal is 1,000,000 members. He wouldn't say how many members there are currently at this time, the Journal said.

Johnson, according to the Journal, said "organization is being slowly in Wisconsin. Wisconsin is a good conservative state."

Grodz was quoted as saying

he was a council member of the society. The Journal said Grodz "didn't think Eisenhower was a Communist and said he had no comment about the book."

The society was named after John Birch, an American Army captain and Fundamentals Hospital chairman, who allegedly was murdered by Chinese Communists 10 days after V-J Day, according to the Journal story.

Vacationer Slips, Plunges To Death Over 100-Ft. Falls

MALIBU LODGE, E.C. (AP)—John H. Dorker, 23, slipped into water near the top of Chamberlain Falls at the head of Princess Louise Inlet and was carried over the 100-foot falls.

His father, Gerald W. Dorker of Tacoma, Wash., is a boat builder, helped pull the badly injured man from the water.

A radio call was sent for help. But he died minutes before an RCMP plane arrived with a doctor.

Young Dorker was vacationing with his parents, two brothers and a sister on the family yacht in the remote area.

He and three others had climbed the rocks beside the falls before the accident. He was on leave from duty with the Air Force in Idaho.

8/11/60 = Welch sent a memo to all JBS National Council members (copied below) regarding what he described as “the smear campaign” against the JBS which occurred as a consequence of accurate publicity concerning the content of *The Politician*.

THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY
Belmont 36, Massachusetts

AUGUST 11, 1960

To All Members of The COUNCIL:

This is a confirmation and reminder that the next meeting of the COUNCIL will be at this office, 395 Concord Avenue, Belmont, Massachusetts, beginning sharply at 9:00 A.M. on Saturday, September 10. Late that afternoon we'll adjourn to the Harvard Club of Boston for dinner, and then continue the meeting as far into the evening as may seem advisable.

The storm over the newspaper attacks, based on quotations from *The Politician*, has now pretty well evaporated. Present indications are that it has made the Society stronger; and that the Left Wing made a mistake, from their point of view, in thus causing a lot of people to start wondering about some sinister possibilities which they had not considered before. There is little point in my saying more about the whole episode here, however, but for three brief comments:

(1) As soon as we get over the desolated condition of this office, due to vacations, we are going to start calling back in all copies of *The Politician* that are outstanding. We do not think our having done so earlier would have made the slightest difference with regard to the recent attacks, because the copy used was one we had sent out in the early fall of 1959. Nor do we think that we shall be able to get all copies back. But we believe that a conscientious attempt to do so will put us in a stronger position with regard to any future possible attacks on the same grounds.

(2) The unhesitating support of members of our COUNCIL, during the recent smear campaign, at whatever cost to themselves, is bound to have been a terrific surprise to the Left, and calls for gratitude on my part beyond my power to express. Those members who, to my knowledge, were hounded at viciously and extensively by the "liberals" for being members of our COUNCIL, were Coleman Andrews, Jay Connor, Dr. S. M. Dreskovich, Bill Grede and Cola Parker. There may have been others -- or say still be. We'll find out at the meeting of the COUNCIL on September 10. But those five really "took it," and kept right on backing myself and the Society with their full -- and powerful -- moral support. Bill Grede in particular, both because of his unusual problems and circumstances at the time, and because he was singled out for attack and ridicule by some of the more "liberal" papers, deserves the most fervent thanks of every member of the John Birch Society. Winding up his statement for both his employees and the press with the comment that he was proud to be a member of the John Birch

- 2 -

Society took the same kind of courage as shown by the signers of our Declaration of Independence six generations ago. As did Cola Parker's stand, when interviewed by two newspapers, and that of each of the others.

(3) The loyalty of our membership as a whole was no less firm than that of our COUNCIL. We have not had one single resignation from Wisconsin, where the smear was worst. The total resignations to date have been nine from Illinois and one from Indiana. And almost all of those resigning had only recently become members of the Society. In Greater Chicago we now have approximately fifty more members than we had when the storm first broke, in the suburb of Glenview, over *The Politician*. And every one of the sixty new members, giving us the net increase of fifty, knew about the manuscript (and what it says) when he joined. There are enough patriotic citizens in this country really stirred up about the stealthy Communist advance to stop it -- if we can just find them, and coordinate their opposition, in time.

We shall have this need, the outlook, and many policies and plans, to discuss at the COUNCIL meeting on September 10. Will each of you please come who can -- it is important -- and let us know soon that you will be here.

In the meantime, my warmest thanks and kindest regards to each of you, one and all.

Sincerely,
Robert Welch
Robert Welch



Due to Google sites space limitations, the *Documentary History of the John Birch Society* is on 5 webpages here:

CHAPTER.....Time Period.....URL

- JBS 9-1 / 01/58 thru 08/11/60 = <https://sites.google.com/site/ernie1241/>
- JBS 9-2 / 09/60/60 thru 12/15/61 = <https://sites.google.com/site/ernie1241a/>
- JBS 9-3 / 01/62 thru 12/31/64 = <https://sites.google.com/site/ernie1241b/>
- JBS 9-4 / 01/65 thru 12/31/65 = <https://sites.google.com/site/jbs9004/>
- JBS 9-5 / 01/66 thru current = <https://sites.google.com/site/jbs9005a/>

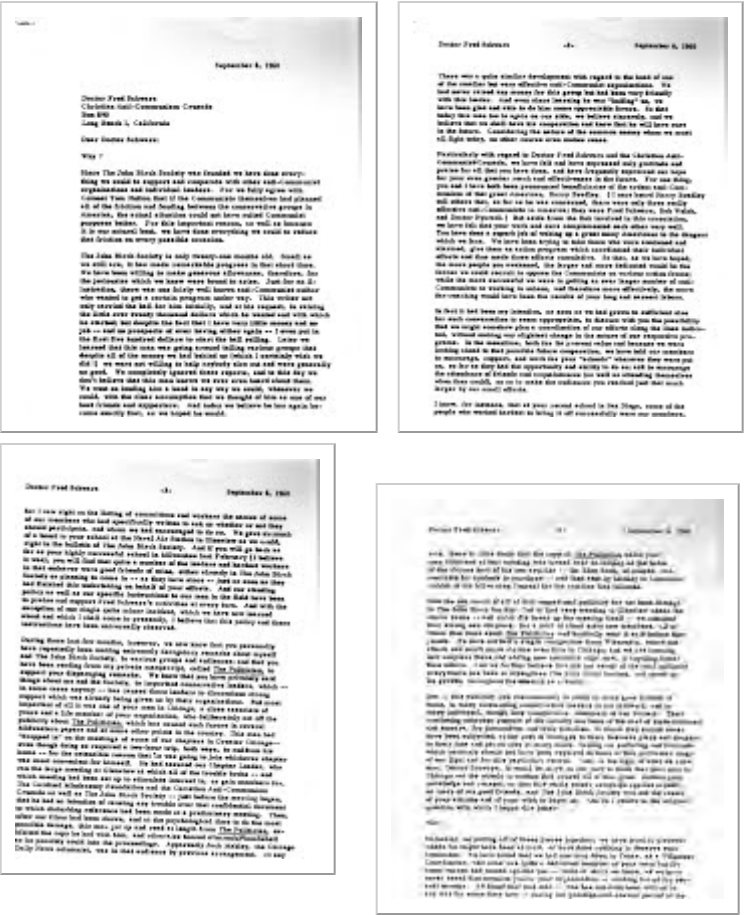
Comments

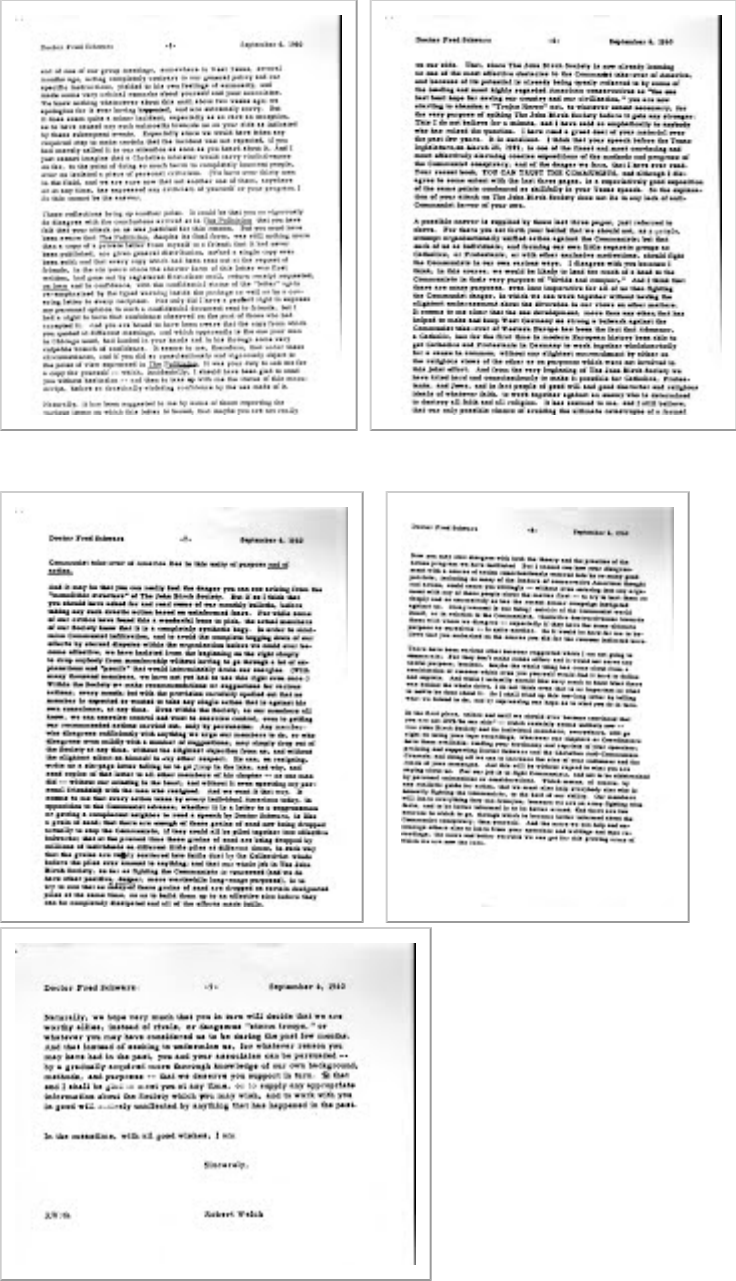
[Sign in](#) | [Recent Site Activity](#) | [Report Abuse](#) | [Print Page](#) | Powered By [Google Sites](#)

Documentary History of John Birch
Society

1960--continued

9/6/60 = In a blistering letter to Fred Schwarz of Christian Anti-Communism Crusade, Welch expresses incredulity that Schwarz would attempt to undermine and bad-mouth the JBS. This letter is also significant because it, too, falsifies standard JBS dogma about the “*Communist*” origins of the “*smear attack*” on the JBS.





9/14/60 = Robert Welch memo "To All Members of The COUNCIL" reports statistical information concerning JBS chapters and members:

"...that on Saturday, September 10, we had 324 chapters and approximately 5300 members. This represents a gain of 84 chapters and about 1500 members since the last meeting of the COUNCIL on June 18...We had only 75 chapters and 1500 members at the first meeting of the COUNCIL last January..."

11/16/60 = Robert Welch memo "To All Members of The COUNCIL" states that the next Council meeting will be held on December 10, 1960 at the Harvard Club in New York City. Item #2 on the agenda, according to Welch would be:

"A brief report of the various smears of, and attacks on, the Society during the past few months. Not all of these attacks are known to some members of our COUNCIL, and some of them are not known to any members. We shall seek the COUNCIL'S advice on basic policy, with regard to such attacks in the future."

This is a particularly significant item because it falsifies subsequent JBS mythology concerning the "Communist" origins of "smear attacks" against the JBS.

Standard JBS dogma maintains that attacks upon the JBS (aka the "smear campaign") began as a consequence of "orders" from Moscow in December 1960 and those "orders" resulted in a

“mother article” which appeared in the February 25, 1961 issue of the Communist newspaper, *People’s World*.

See, for example, former FBI Special Agent W. Cleon Skousen’s fictional account here:
<http://www.zeios.com/OurRepublic/Article/27>

“Because the Birch Society was practically unknown to the general American public I wondered how the Communist Party would launch its campaign. I had no idea that the legitimate American press would fall for the line which the Communists were about to broadcast.

On February 25, 1961, the official Communist newspaper on the West Coast called the *Daily People’s World*, fired the opening broadside. The article was entitled, “Enter (from Stage Right) THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY.” The article depicted the John Birchers as a secret, Fascist society and said that it was setting up ‘cells’ all across the country.

Of course, the *People’s World* has a very limited distribution which would do little damage, but the thing which astonished me was the rapidity with which the transmission belt began to function so that this story was planted in one major news medium after another until finally even some of the more conservative papers had taken up the hue and cry.”

The reality, as Welch acknowledged to his Council in November 1960, is that the “attacks” and “smears” began “during the past few months” – not as a result of any Communist newspaper article in February 1961. In fact, in the opening paragraph of the September 1960 *JBS Bulletin*, Welch lamented that:

“For the past five weeks – it seems like five months – the John Birch Society has lived through one massive smear campaign on a national scale, and several regional attacks with varying degrees of plausibility, reach, and impact.”

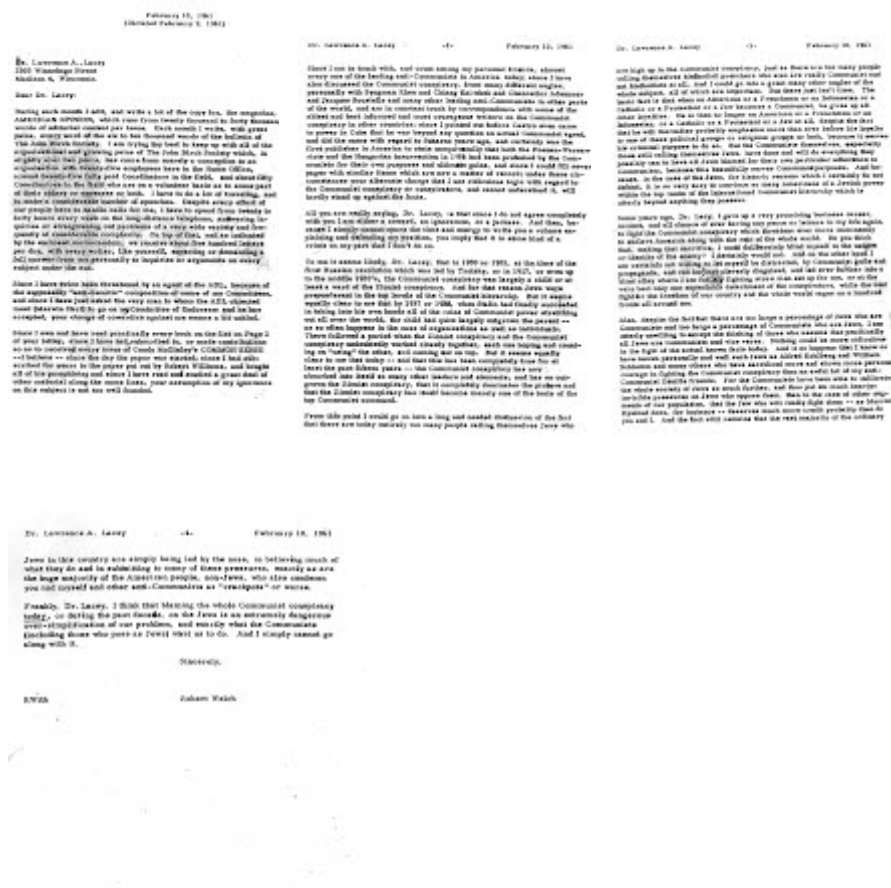
Furthermore, see details above concerning Welch’s 4/60 Report to the JBS National Council which includes a discussion of the attack on Welch and the JBS by Elizabeth Dilling.

1961

2/61 = FBI Director J. Edgar Hoover requested a summary memo concerning what was known about Robert Welch and the John Birch Society. The resulting 2/7/61 memo from a Section Chief in the Domestic Intelligence Division to the Assistant Director in charge of that Division concluded:

"We have been closely watching the activities of the JBS through the information supplied by the field. However, to date no information has been received indicating subversive elements have infiltrated or taken over any chapters of JBS. Also, no information has been received indicating JBS is operating as a 'hate' group or that its activities warrant investigation by the Bureau. To conduct any investigation of this anticommunist group could possibly cause embarrassment to the Bureau as most of the people active in the chapters of JBS are community leaders, leading businessmen and respected citizens. Some also appear to be crackpots." [FBI HQ file 62-104401, #639; 2/7/61 summary memo from F.J. Baumgardner to Alan H. Belmont]

2/10/61 = Robert Welch letter to Dr. Lawrence A. Lacey regarding "Communist-Zionist Conspiracy":



2/17/61 = The Boston FBI field office sent J. Edgar Hoover a very detailed background report concerning Robert Welch and the JBS. Some of the information which Boston obtained was from former FBI informant Herbert Philbrick (of *I Led 3 Lives* fame) who stated that he was a Home Chapter member of the JBS.

Boston reported the following:

(1) *American Opinion* magazine (formerly known as *One Man's Opinion*) - was incorporated 1/13/56. The President and Treasurer was Robert H.W. Welch Jr of 43 Fletcher Road - Belmont MA. The Clerk/Secretary was Ellen M. Lovett of Cambridge MA. The Directors were Robert Welch, Ellen Lovett and Ellen Douglas Gucker. Welch held 1001 shares of common stock. A financial statement filed 4/23/58 showed assets of \$27,320.85. A financial statement dated 6/3/59 showed assets of \$65,003.54 and a financial statement dated 6/27/60 showed assets of \$77,475.82.

(2) John Birch Society, Inc. was incorporated 12/23/58 and giving charter number 624-300. The officers were the same as for American Opinion magazine. The Directors listed were Mary M. White of West Concord MA, Robert Welch, and Ellen Lovett. The incorporators were: Robert Welch, Marian Probert Welch (Robert's wife), Ellen M. Lovett of Cambridge MA, Mary M. White of West Concord MA; Ellen Douglas Snow aka Mrs. Stanley Carman Snow, formerly Mrs. Alexander Gucker of Belmont MA; Philip L. Jenkins of Brockton MA and Juliette D. Guild of Hingham MA.

(3) Robert H.W. Welch Jr: He was born in Edenton NC on 12/1/1899. He married Marian Probert in 1922 and had 2 sons, Robert Jr. born 1923 and Hillard W. Welch born 1925.

Robert H.W. Welch enrolled in the U.S. Naval Academy at Annapolis MD during World War I and during World War II he served on the Advisory Commission of the Office of Price Administration for the candy industry. In 1922, Welch founded the Oxford Candy Company and was its Sales Manager in 1935. Beginning in 1940, he was Vice President and Director of Sales and Advertising of his brother's candy company, The James O. Welch Company of Cambridge MA. In 1947, Welch was the recipient of the Kettle Award by the candy industry. From 1940-1944, Welch was a Board member of the Massachusetts Chess Federation.

From 1951 to 1954, he was a member of the Belmont MA School Committee and served as Director of several small businesses and one bank. He served as Chairman of the Board of the

Washington Commission of the National Association of Candy Manufacturers and also was a member of the Board of Directors of the United Prison Association. From 1951-1957 he was a Director of the National Association of Manufacturers, being its Vice President from 1955-1957. In 1941, he authored the book, *The Road To Salesmanship*. In 1952 his book, *May God Forgive Us* was published and in 1954, *The Life of John Birch*.

2/25/61 = What the Birch Society describes as the "mother article" which launched a "smear attack" upon the JBS in the mainstream media (such as *Time* magazine about a week later) is published in the Communist newspaper, *People's World*. The article is copied below.



3/9/61 = The FBI's evaluation of the John Birch Society was starkly negative and it was not based upon any Communist newspaper article. The Bureau's primary expert on the communist movement (i.e. their Chief Inspector who ultimately became Assistant Director in charge of the FBI's Domestic Intelligence Division) describes the JBS as "a lunatic fringe type of organization" which is "typical of the fanatics" which FBI speakers confront when they attempt to give the public "a true factual picture concerning the nature of the threat which communist activities in this country represent." FBI memo copied below.



3/13/61 = Robert Welch letter to Otis Chandler, publisher of the *Los Angeles Times* -- commenting upon its series of articles about the JBS and a not-too-friendly editorial published by the *Times*:



[illegible]

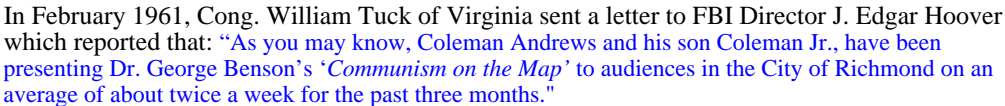
REF ID: A66082

[illegible]

At 1954 has mainly been a loudy vapour for the Committee, showing
and their shape and appearance to date. Committee, 1954, 1955, 1956,
and 1957, 1958, 1959, 1960, 1961, 1962, 1963, 1964, 1965, 1966, 1967, 1968,
1969, 1970, 1971, 1972, 1973, 1974, 1975, 1976, 1977, 1978, 1979, 1980,
1981, 1982, 1983, 1984, 1985, 1986, 1987, 1988, 1989, 1990, 1991, 1992,
1993, 1994, 1995, 1996, 1997, 1998, 1999, 2000, 2001, 2002, 2003, 2004,
2005, 2006, 2007, 2008, 2009, 2010, 2011, 2012, 2013, 2014, 2015, 2016,
2017, 2018, 2019, 2020, 2021, 2022, 2023, 2024, 2025, 2026, 2027, 2028,
2029, 2030, 2031, 2032, 2033, 2034, 2035, 2036, 2037, 2038, 2039, 2040,
2041, 2042, 2043, 2044, 2045, 2046, 2047, 2048, 2049, 2050, 2051, 2052,
2053, 2054, 2055, 2056, 2057, 2058, 2059, 2060, 2061, 2062, 2063, 2064,
2065, 2066, 2067, 2068, 2069, 2070, 2071, 2072, 2073, 2074, 2075, 2076,
2077, 2078, 2079, 2080, 2081, 2082, 2083, 2084, 2085, 2086, 2087, 2088,
2089, 2090, 2091, 2092, 2093, 2094, 2095, 2096, 2097, 2098, 2099, 2100,
2101, 2102, 2103, 2104, 2105, 2106, 2107, 2108, 2109, 2110, 2111, 2112,
2113, 2114, 2115, 2116, 2117, 2118, 2119, 2120, 2121, 2122, 2123, 2124,
2125, 2126, 2127, 2128, 2129, 2130, 2131, 2132, 2133, 2134, 2135, 2136,
2137, 2138, 2139, 2140, 2141, 2142, 2143, 2144, 2145, 2146, 2147, 2148,
2149, 2150, 2151, 2152, 2153, 2154, 2155, 2156, 2157, 2158, 2159, 2160,
2161, 2162, 2163, 2164, 2165, 2166, 2167, 2168, 2169, 2170, 2171, 2172,
2173, 2174, 2175, 2176, 2177, 2178, 2179, 2180, 2181, 2182, 2183, 2184,
2185, 2186, 2187, 2188, 2189, 2190, 2191, 2192, 2193, 2194, 2195, 2196,
2197, 2198, 2199, 2200, 2201, 2202, 2203, 2204, 2205, 2206, 2207, 2208,
2209, 2210, 2211, 2212, 2213, 2214, 2215, 2216, 2217, 2218, 2219, 2220,
2221, 2222, 2223, 2224, 2225, 2226, 2227, 2228, 2229, 2230, 2231, 2232,
2233, 2234, 2235, 2236, 2237, 2238, 2239, 2240, 2241, 2242, 2243, 2244,
2245, 2246, 2247, 2248, 2249, 2250, 2251, 2252, 2253, 2254, 2255, 2256,
2257, 2258, 2259, 2260, 2261, 2262, 2263, 2264, 2265, 2266, 2267, 2268,
2269, 2270, 2271, 2272, 2273, 2274, 2275, 2276, 2277, 2278, 2279, 2280,
2281, 2282, 2283, 2284, 2285, 2286, 2287, 2288, 2289, 2290, 2291, 2292,
2293, 2294, 2295, 2296, 2297, 2298, 2299, 2300, 2301, 2302, 2303, 2304,
2305, 2306, 2307, 2308, 2309, 2310, 2311, 2312, 2313, 2314, 2315, 2316,
2317, 2318, 2319, 2320, 2321, 2322, 2323, 2324, 2325, 2326, 2327, 2328,
2329, 2330, 2331, 2332, 2333, 2334, 2335, 2336, 2337, 2338, 2339, 2340,
2341, 2342, 2343, 2344, 2345, 2346, 2347, 2348, 2349, 2350, 2351, 2352,
2353, 2354, 2355, 2356, 2357, 2358, 2359, 2360, 2361, 2362, 2363, 2364,
2365, 2366, 2367, 2368, 2369, 2370, 2371, 2372, 2373, 2374, 2375, 2376,
2377, 2378, 2379, 2380, 2381, 2382, 2383, 2384, 2385, 2386, 2387, 2388,
2389, 2390, 2391, 2392, 2393, 2394, 2395, 2396, 2397, 2398, 2399, 2400,
2401, 2402, 2403, 2404, 2405, 2406, 2407, 2408, 2409, 2410, 2411, 2412,
2413, 2414, 2415, 2416, 2417, 2418, 2419, 2420, 2421, 2422, 2423, 2424,
2425, 2426, 2427, 2428, 2429, 2430, 2431, 2432, 2433, 2434, 2435, 2436,
2437, 2438, 2439, 2440, 2441, 2442, 2443, 2444, 2445, 2446, 2447, 2448,
2449, 2450, 2451, 2452, 2453, 2454, 2455, 2456, 2457, 2458, 2459, 2460,
2461, 2462, 2463, 2464, 2465, 2466, 2467, 2468, 2469, 2470, 2471, 2472,
2473, 2474, 2475, 2476, 2477, 2478, 2479, 2480, 2481, 2482, 2483, 2484,
2485, 2486, 2487, 2488, 2489, 2490, 2491, 2492, 2493, 2494, 2495, 2496,
2497, 2498, 2499, 2500, 2501, 2502, 2503, 2504, 2505, 2506, 2507, 2508,
2509, 2510, 2511, 2512, 2513, 2514, 2515, 2516, 2517, 2518, 2519, 2520,
2521, 2522, 2523, 2524, 2525, 2526, 2527, 2528, 2529, 2530, 2531, 2532,
2533, 2534, 2535, 2536, 2537, 2538, 2539, 2540, 2541, 2542, 2543, 2544,
2545, 2546, 2547, 2548, 2549, 2550, 2551, 2552, 2553, 2554, 2555, 2556,
2557, 2558, 2559, 2560, 2561, 2562, 2563, 2564, 2565, 2566, 2567, 2568,
2569, 2570, 2571, 2572, 2573, 2574, 2575, 2576, 2577, 2578, 2579, 2580,
2581, 2582, 2583, 2584, 2585, 2586, 2587, 2588, 2589, 2590, 2591, 2592,
2593, 2594, 2595, 2596, 2597, 2598, 2599, 2600, 2601, 2602, 2603, 2604,
2605, 2606, 2607, 2608, 2609, 2610, 2611, 2612, 2613, 2614, 2615, 2616,
2617, 2618, 2619, 2620, 26

3/20/61 WELCH LETTER PAGE 2:

The "[ardent member](#)" referred to by Welch was Glenn A. Green -- Executive Vice President of the National Education Program headed by George S. Benson (located at Harding College, Searcy AR). More about Harding College below. See Glenn Green's 11/11/59 letter to Robert Welch [here](#):



The FBI obtained a copy of the filmstrip from the U.S. Navy in December 1960 and it was reviewed by senior Bureau officials in its Domestic Intelligence Division. The file copy of Hoover's 2/7/61 reply to Cong. Tuck contains the following notation:

The original December 1960 FBI review of the filmstrip was as follows:

page 1:

“In recent months we have received a number of inquiries concerning a lecture and film strip entitled *Communism on the Map*. The Bureau has had no information concerning this lecture and accordingly, through Liaison, a copy of the taped lecture and film strip was obtained on loan from the Department of the Navy through Lt. Commander C.S. Williams, Aide to Vice Admiral William R. Smedberg III, Chief of Bureau of Naval Personnel. Admiral Smedberg had considered the film biased.”

“This lecture and film strip was reviewed on December 22, 1960 by Section Chief G.H. Scatterday and Special Agents C.D. Brennan, (name deleted), V.E. Ruehl, and (names deleted). The lecture and film strip was prepared by the National Education Program, Searcy Arkansas of which George Benson is on the Bureau’s special correspondents list...”

“The film stressed the rise of international communism from its beginning in Russia to its current alleged encirclement of the United States. It covered Soviet infiltration and control of various European, African and Asian countries and indicated substantial Soviet infiltration into South America, Latin America, and Canada, which is gradually encircling the United States. The principal theme of the lecture is based upon an alleged statement by Lenin, ‘*First we will take Eastern Europe. Next, the masses of Asia. Then we shall encircle the last bastion of capitalism, the United States of America. We shall not have to attack. It will fall like an overripe fruit into our hands.*’ In this connection, it should be noted that this alleged statement has previously come to the Bureau’s attention and extensive research by the Central Research Section has failed to establish that this or a similar statement was ever attributed to Lenin.”

Page 2:

“Through such statements and the use of pictures, newspaper headlines and maps, the lecture and film strip frequently deal in half truths, distortion of truth and innuendos to establish its point, that international communism is encircling America. Through references to activities in the 1940’s, it infers that the United States Government is heavily infiltrated by communists at the present time. These references refer to the days of Coplon, Hiss, and others; however, through the distorted presentation of this material, the average person may believe there are currently many communists in Government service. Although the FBI is not mentioned by name, the lecture and film strip could well be interpreted as indirectly implying that the FBI has been most derelict in its duties in not eliminating spies and communists from Government service.”

“It was the consensus of opinion of the Agents reviewing the lecture and film strip that it is not the type of material which should be used or endorsed by the FBI.”

The “Recommendations” section of memo includes following notation: “Suggest we tell Williams for the Admiral’s information, that we agree with Admiral Smedberg that the film is biased.” Hoover wrote “OK” and initialed the suggestion – which was “handled 1/3/61”.

MORE ABOUT HARDING COLLEGE - Searcy AR

In September 1965, James D. Bales, Professor of Christian Doctrine at Harding College (Searcy AR), sought permission from the FBI to publish a compilation of J. Edgar Hoover’s public comments about communism but Hoover refused to authorize such a publication.

One FBI memo reports that Bales had written to Robert Welch to inquire if the JBS publishing house (Western Islands) would be interested in publishing such a compilation of Hoover’s comments about communism, to be entitled “*J. Edgar Hoover on Communism*”. Robert Welch was enthusiastic and the JBS drew up a contract with Bales. A JBS representative met with an FBI Special Agent in Boston to discuss the idea. [FBI HQ file 62-104401, #3151; 6/26/67 memo from R.E. Wick to Assistant Director Cartha D. DeLoach, page 1.]

Page 2 of the memo has the following summary of the 1965 contact by Bales:

“In a memorandum prepared at this time, it was noted that Bales corresponded frequently with the Bureau and that Harding College is well known as a right-wing anticommunist center (and) is a source of extremist-type literature in the field of anti-communism. It was noted that it would be highly unwise for the Director to be associated publicly with Harding College.”

Bales sent a letter to J. Edgar Hoover dated 9/14/66 stating that despite the FBI’s rejection of his proposal, he intended to go forward with it because Hoover’s comments were already in the public domain. The FBI memo then observes:

“Following receipt of the above letter from Bales, he was removed from the Special Correspondents’ List and he was again told the Director could not give any permission to either publish this manuscript as a book or to circulate it in any manner.”

Page 3 of memo “*Observations and Recommendation*” observes:

"It is felt the Director should remain firm in continuing to deny Bales and also the JBS permission to publish excerpts from the Director's quotations on communism. It is not felt that such a book could possibly give a balanced view of the Director's statements and in view of the extremist position taken by both Bales and the Birch Society, it is anticipated that the Director could be subject to public criticism by any implied association with Bales and the Birch Society."

3/20/61 WELCH LETTER PAGE 3

Welch repeats standard mythology about his so-called book-length "private letter", *The Politician*: "By the time The John Birch Society was even founded I had stopped making copies of this 'long letter', we were letting it fade out of the picture, and it has never been any part of the materials of The John Birch Society in any way."

The reality is that during 1959 and 1960 Welch used *The Politician* as a recruitment tool for the John Birch Society. He sent copies of his unpublished "private letter" to many individuals and he asked them to read and believe its content -- and then join the JBS to do something about "the conspiracy" discussed in its pages. This is confirmed by both the FBI and a 1960 Naval Intelligence Report. In fact, as late as December 27, 1961, T. Coleman Andrews wrote the following letter to Welch:

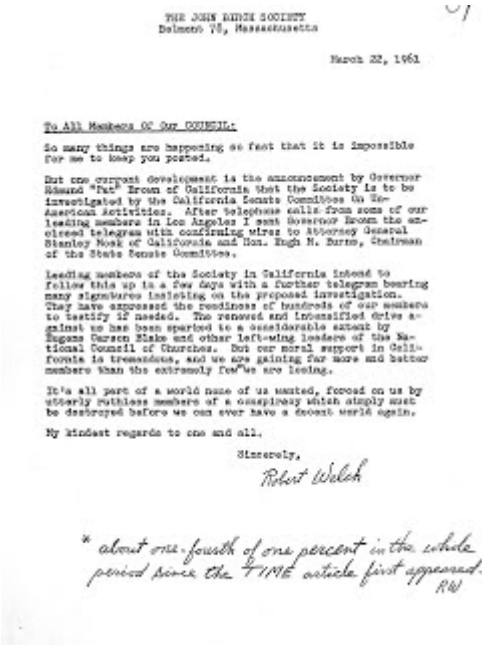
"Dear Bob: This is just to remind you that you said you would let me have another look at *The Politician*. Lon Backman tells me that you loaned him a copy recently and that he has now finished reading it and could send it over to me if it would be all right for him to do so."

See chapter 1 of my JBS Report for details as well as scanned copies of documents which establish that Welch deliberately lied about this matter.

<https://sites.google.com/site/ernie124102/jbs-1>

3/22/61 = Robert Welch "To All Members of Our COUNCIL": Welch discusses the announcement by Gov. Edmund Brown of California that the JBS will be the subject of an investigation by the California State Senate Factfinding Subcommittee on Un-American Activities.

In typical Bircher fashion, all investigative interest in the JBS is characterized as the result of "utterly ruthless members of a conspiracy". At the first meeting of the JBS National Council in January 1960, Welch described Governor Brown (and Gov. Rockefeller of NY) as "almost certainly actual Communists". When the Subcommittee's Report was released in 1963, Welch was so impressed by its general factual accuracy and fairness to the JBS that he reprinted the entire Report (with some additional comments regarding "errors" from the JBS perspective) and sold it through the Birch Society's American Opinion bookstore chain.



3/31/61 = Robert Welch sends a telegram to Sen. James O. Eastland, Chairman of the Senate Internal Security Subcommittee, asking that the Subcommittee investigate the JBS. Welch

4/1/61 = Two California members of Congress (Edgar W. Hiestand and John H. Rousselot) urge a Congressional inquiry into the JBS to refute "*smears*" about the JBS. Meanwhile, the American Civil Liberties Union defends the JBS in a letter to the Chairman of the House Committee on Un-American Activities by pointing out that "[Regardless of how extreme and distorted \(the Society's\) views may be or how obnoxious they are to us or to the public at large, under the First Amendment, they have the right to be expressed free of government interference.](#)"

[illegible]

the *FBI Law Enforcement Bulletin* dated April 11 1961, I specifically pointed out the need for an objective and dispassionate approach in fighting the communist menace. I felt this step was necessary because of the rash of vigilante-type individuals and organizations springing up throughout the country which tend to depart from fact and use gossip, hearsay, and unsubstantiated charges in fighting communism. In the long run, such tactics hinder rather than help in this fight." [FBI HQ file 62-104401, #990; 4/5/61 memo from Hoover to The Attorney General, captioned "The John Birch Society"]

6/7/61 = Bryton Barron of Springfield VA was a former U.S. State Department Historian. In 1960, he became a JBS Coordinator in Virginia and Washington DC area but on May 14, 1961 he resigned. In June 1961, he circulated a 4-page caustic letter (copied below) to respond to comments by Robert Welch.



In November 1960, Robert Welch sent Barron a 9-page single-spaced typewritten letter in which Welch pointed out that: "At about the time or just before you became a part-time Coordinator for us, you wrote me quite a long letter. In it you made clear that practically everything we were doing in The John Birch Society, in both substance and method, was completely wrong. In fact, you made it quite clear that we had to be both ignorant and childish to be making be mistakes; and with kind condescension and patronizing generosity you told us what we should be doing, and what our objectives should be."

In another letter dated May 16, 1961, Welch opened his letter to Barron by observing: "You began your career in The John Birch Society by fighting with, and bitterly criticizing, every single member of the staff with whom you came in contact, either in person or by mail or telephone."

7/10/61 = In the first example of a JBS National Council member objecting to something which Robert Welch did, Paul Talbert objected to the fact that item #10 of the members agenda in the July 1961 *JBS Bulletin* had not been discussed with, and received approval from, the Council before being adopted as official JBS policy. Item #10 called upon JBS members to begin a project of compiling data on "the leading Comsymps, Socialists, and Liberals" in the U.S. and then send such material to JBS HQ so that the Society could "build up, and have available for all future research needs, the most complete and accurate files in America...on the background, connections, and activities of all the leading Liberals (including, of course, both Comsymps and Dupes).

Copied below is item #10 from the 7/61 *JBS Bulletin* and Welch's reply in a 7/17/61 "To All Members of the COUNCIL" memo:

The GOVERNMENT is the greatest communication in having prohibited most vigorously about Request No. 10. It is the July Bulletin is a member of our COGNITIVE and it was prohibited vigorously that the action had not been submitted to prevent the communication by the GOVERNMENT at our last meeting, so by the Executive Committee the same day. It would be right, and if we do not accept, that we do not believe it is right, and it never even came in my mind to bring up this action at all the meeting, for a number of reasons.

[illegible]

At the same time we are under a constant barrage of letters here, from members all over the country, with hot, hot, simply no class as more work to do! Naturally it has to be work which the members recognize as valid. And in connection with almost every date on our agenda there are background and angles in the considered which would take entirely too long to review accurately for our CONGRESS or American Commission, considering the amount of time they can give to members and the number of matters that need to be discussed. As deadlines near, much of the right problem, in constant involving people and increase again with increasing numbers, and in view of the many considerations involved, is not easy. I think and such reports all through the month, as well as I can.

This time, there are two lines of thought: (1) the need for this "research" work and the need for a suitable project of sufficient obvious importance to our members to

[illegible]

And now, despite all of the above, in the future I shall go on, in talking up with the COMCONCIL or the Executive Commission in advance any project or even projects for action upon which I think there might be any serious disagreement, as it is all predictable. One reason for writing and enclosing the preliminary copy concerning Request No. 36 at the August Indaba in the voluntary spy service or operations was because of the COMCONCIL may wish have to refer, in the meantime, I just have now read up this Requested explanation, and give an answer now. I hope to be seeing it in print with very few amendments -- at San Francisco on September 4, and in the meantime, I send all of you -- with no exceptions -- my warmest thanks for all of you help and support, and no kinder regards.

© 2004 Wiley

not asked

make the work more worth while ... arranged in my mind while I was actually writing the letters. So I put together this 30 or 40 page and time took in one or two months. So, on about five of my leading letters and associates here, that I have written, added, or completely changed since a request on the basis of this work multiple criticism and advice, so it was on the ground. But in this manner one of the few could not anything wrong with the proposed request, as I want alone.

Of course I would still have held it up for the two months or the three months that would have been necessary, respectively, the sharing with either the Administrative Committee or the COMBOS. But it never even occurred to me to do so because, I repeat, the project did not seem to me to involve any transfer of either critical responsibilities or up-to-date or solid data.

[illegible][illegible][illegible][illegible][illegible]

09/05/61 = National Council member Dr. Granville Knight encouraged his fellow Council members to consider "changes (that) must be made if we are to survive." Among the changes discussed by Knight: "Bob Welch must be replaced by a nationally-known figure who has not been badly smeared and who merits the confidence of thinking Americans." Two weeks later, Knight resigned as a National Council member.

[illegible][illegible]

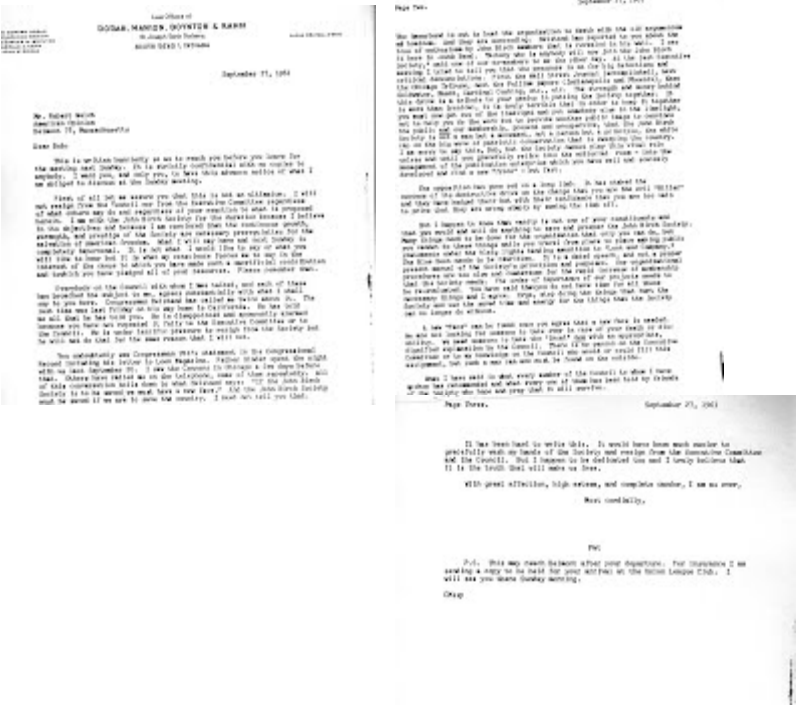
09/12/61 = National Council member Fred Koch (Wichita KS) sent a letter to Council member Tom Anderson (publisher of *Farm and Ranch* magazine), inquiring "how it would be possible to get copies of my book [*A Businessman Looks At Communism*] into the hands of the 1,100,000

of your subscribers, what would it cost to run this booklet in one issue of your magazine?"

Anderson replied on 9/19/61: "We figure we could run your book in the center of our November or December issue---sixteen pages handrunning for a total of \$22,400." It ultimately is published in the July 1962 issue of the magazine. In addition, Anderson arranges with his printer to print 100,000 extra copies of the 16-page insert that ran in the July 1962 issue. In September 1962, Anderson tells Koch that 60,000 of the reprints had been purchased and Council member Paul Talbert in California had just ordered 10,000. The Birch Society in Nashville TN distributed inserts to all doctor's offices in Nashville. In October 1962, Anderson tells Koch that he only has 2500 reprints left and by 11/3/62 the supply was exhausted. Anderson states that he has "several thousand unfilled orders on hand". On 11/9/62, Koch asked Anderson to arrange for printing of 100,000 new reprints at .3 cents each.

09/23/61 = National Council member Dr. Granville Frank tells Tom Anderson: "I have sent in my resignation from the Council due to my inability to attend meetings and my feeling that unless one is active he should retire in favor of someone who is able to attend the meetings."

09/27/61 = Clarence "Pat" Manion sends Robert Welch a letter (copied below) which supports Dr. Granville Knight's evaluation of the dire situation facing the Birch Society because of substantial negative publicity about Robert Welch. Manion tells Welch that other prominent JBS members, including National Council members such as Father Richard Ginder and Stillwell J. Conner are in accord about the need for a new person to become the public face of the Birch Society. On November 14, 1961, National Council member T. Coleman Andrews sends a letter to Clarence Manion agreeing with his comments. Andrews tells Manion: "I know that it must have been extremely difficult for you to say to Bob the things that you did say to him, but I know how you feel, because I feel exactly the same way; however, the difference between you and me is that I would not have been able to say it nearly so well as you did. I sincerely hope that Bob is going to take your advice. If he doesn't, we will just have to do something about it."



In 1969, Father Ginder was arrested on morals charges after the Pittsburgh PA Police Department found photos in his apartment of teenage boys engaged in homosexual acts plus Ginder diaries documenting his own homosexual activities. Ginder was placed on 10 years probation. In 1978, Ginder was arrested again on morals charges.

[Pittsburgh Post-Gazette, February 28, 2004](#)

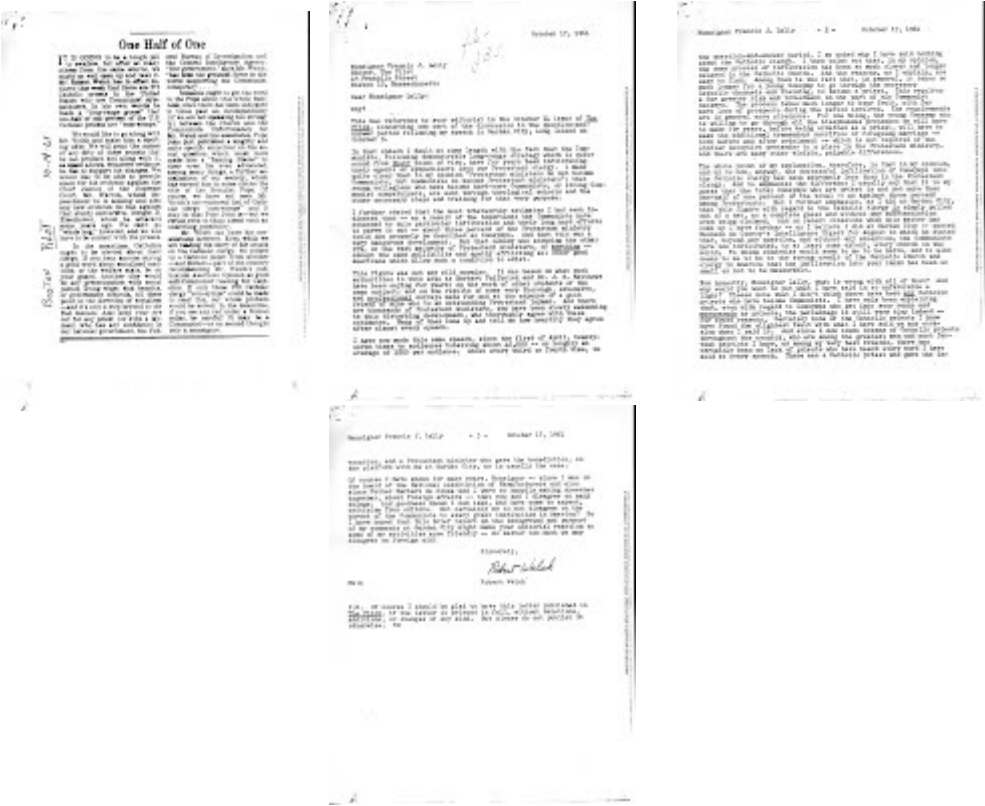
"Rev. Richard Ginder -- Former editor of prominent Catholic publications, including *Our Sunday Visitor*, and official diocesan censor. Placed on 10 years' probation in 1969 after police searched his Squirrel Hill home and found photographs of teenage boys performing homosexual acts and diaries documenting his own acts. Stripped of priestly duties in 1976 after publishing a book criticizing church positions on sexual morality. In 1978, convicted of sodomizing two 16-year-old boys. Sentenced to up to four years in prison. Died at age 70 in a 1984 car accident."

09/28/61 = JBS National Council member Frank Brophy responded to anti-JBS comments made by Governor Pat Brown of California. Robert Welch included a copy of Brophy's letter with the 11/61 issue of the *JBS Bulletin*, copied below.



10/14/61 = Monsignor Francis Lally, the Editor of the Catholic publication *Boston Pilot*, challenged Robert Welch in an editorial entitled "*One Half Of One*" to document his assertion in an October 9th speech in Garden City, Long Island, New York that one-half of one percent of Catholic priests in the U.S. were Communist sympathizers -- which would mean 273 priests.

Copied below is the editorial and Robert Welch's reply to Monsignor Lally:



It should be pointed out that neither of Welch's statistical estimates regarding the number of Protestant and Catholic clergy who could accurately be described as "*Communist*" or "*Communist sympathizer*" are correct -- according to the FBI. Welch stated that he relied upon such "*authorities in this area as Herbert Philbrick and Dr. J.B. Matthews*" but the FBI evaluation of the assertions made by J.B. Matthews in his July 1953 article which Welch relied upon for his estimate - was as follows:

In arrangement, handling of names, selection of facts, and in its implications, the article is not at all fair to the Protestant clergy of this country" and it characterized Matthew's

11/61 = Council member Revilo Oliver issues a press release describing Robert Welch as "one of the finest and noblest men I have ever had the privilege of knowing. I believe absolutely in his integrity and his judgment, and I support him without reservation." However, 4 1/2 years later Oliver resigned from the Birch Society after making a speech with anti-semitic overtones. In his resignation letter Oliver told Welch that:

[illegible]

12/5/61 = JBS National Council member Clarence Manion sends Council member T. Coleman Andrews a copy of a letter which Manion received from a JBS Chapter Leader in California. Manion handwrites on top of the letter "**Dear Coleman: This letter is only one of many.**" The letter expresses the frustration of the Chapter Leader concerning Robert Welch's statements about President Eisenhower being a Communist traitor contained in his unpublished private letter, *The Politician*: "I have talked with many people. They all seem to think of the Birch Society and Welch synonymously and therefore their opinion is that it is a name-calling smear organization, etc. As I told you yesterday, the minute the Society's name comes up, so does the subject of Eisenhower and Welch. They seem to close their ears the minute that it is mentioned...After a lot of thinking and discussion on the subject, the only way that our chapter members can come to a decision on the subject is that Welch should step down, and allow the Council to be the voice of the Society. I think Welch is a terrific patriot...and would not stand for a second in the way of (JBS) progress."

12/61 = Rev. Richard Ginder resigns from JBS National Council.

JBS 9-1 / 01/58 thru 08/11/60 = <https://sites.google.com/site/ernie1241/>

JBS 9-2 / 09/60/60 thru 12/15/61 = <https://sites.google.com/site/ernie1241a/>
JBS 9-3 / 01/62 thru 12/31/64 = <https://sites.google.com/site/ernie1241b/>
JBS 9-4 / 01/65 thru 12/31/65 = <https://sites.google.com/site/jbs9004/>
JBS 9-5 / 01/66 thru current = <https://sites.google.com/site/jbs9005a/>

.....

Documentary History of the John Birch Society

1962

01/62 = Frank Cullen Brophy of Phoenix AZ and Robert D. Love of Wichita KS and Robert H. Montgomery of Boston MA join the JBS National Council.

01/01/62 = Robert Welch sends a letter to Tom Anderson, J. Bracken Lee, M.T. Phelps and Dr. Charles C. Tansill in their capacity as judges "[in our contest for the best essays by college undergraduates on GROUNDS FOR THE IMPEACHMENT OF EARL WARREN...We have reduced the number of essays to be submitted to yourselves to twelve, of which nine will win prizes.](#)"

01/31/62 = Robert Welch replied to a letter from National Council member Lt. Gen. Charles B. Stone III regarding criticisms of Welch and the JBS by William F. Buckley Jr. Welch characterized the Buckley comments as "[merely on of the surface parts of a huge, many-fingered, and to some extent organized campaign, not just to discredit and get rid of me, but actually to destroy The John Birch Society or at least reduce it to the level of another innocuous and frustrated debating society.](#)" Welch's letter is copied below:



Sergeant General Charles B. Stone, II January 31, 1961

I can't avoid my open issue with Buckley from my side, and we shall certainly continue to support him as negative. MYRTLEA BUCKLEY, and her other workmate and Communist fellow traveler by his name and his associates.

I know that you sent a copy of your letter to a few members of our COUNCIL. Since I am more or less right with you, therefore, I am sending copies of that letter, and of this reply to their (our) leaders of the COUNCIL. For my time is so incredibly crowded that I want to take advantage of this means of bringing some of them a link like you do date on the whole matter, and so that they will have a better understanding of the opening page of the February book which I have already given to you. Information, and now is the possibility of any sign here to be issued, so I hope that every member of the COUNCIL will consider your letter and write me confidentially within the next week.

I have your very nice letter of several weeks ago. Clearly, concerning no military defense matter, still showing someone on my mind to send that huge pile of unsentenced correspondence. So let me merely say that even on that count, certainly none so much since in the matter under discussion is the favorable nature, at any time without making me to go about it first.

I do hope that you can make the full meeting of the COUNCIL on March 30 in Chicago, and I shall be looking forward very much to seeing you at that time. In conclusion, and so always, my kindest regards,

Sincerely,
Robert Welch

BW:fjs

02/03/62 = Sen. Barry Goldwater replies to a 1/31/62 letter he received from JBS National Council member Robert D. Love. Goldwater explains his position concerning Robert Welch:

[illegible]

Mr. Robert S. Linn Page One February 8, 1961

I have this in a morning and very pleasant stop to make, but you see, now, I make an average or even somewhat a much followed up questions not money, and I don't without explanation, the question of the BIRTH BIRTHLY comes up and when I reply them with the answer I have just written, the next on always "You see balance in the things that you make again?" Being cherishing sort of a critique of all the things that he has said in The Last year, I, I think, must demonstrate myself with most of these statements, but all in time, what you, but most of them.

I think the BIRTH BIRTHLY has great potential. I think when he has done a close job on itself wherever I am equipped with their abilities. I further think that the only doubt should remain around the only possibility is only one, the unexpected, namely, someone who wants that have been made up during the past few years, people, because BIRTH and the BIRTH BIRTHLY should be attached.

That is in addition but I do not intend because of it to make personal attacks on him for whom, as I have said, I have sympathy.

With best wishes,

Robert S. Linn

02/13/62 = *National Review* magazine publishes a highly critical article, "*The Question of Robert Welch*" which declares:

"How can the John Birch Society be an effective political instrument while it is led by a man whose views on current affairs are, at so many critical points . . . so far removed from common sense? That dilemma weighs on conservatives across America. . . . The underlying problem is whether conservatives can continue to acquiesce quietly in a rendition of the causes of the

decline of the Republic and the entire Western world which is false, and, besides that, crucially different in practical emphasis from their own."

Sen. Barry Goldwater associated himself with the *National Review* position:

"I think you have clearly stated the problem which Mr. Welch's continued leadership of the John Birch Society poses for sincere conservatives. . . . Mr. Welch is only one man, and I do not believe his views, far removed from reality and common sense as they are, represent the feelings of most members of the John Birch Society. . . . Because of this, I believe the best thing Mr. Welch could do to serve the cause of anti-Communism in the United States would be to resign. . . . We cannot allow the emblem of irresponsibility to attach to the conservative banner."

02/08/62 = Council member Fred Koch sends letter to Tom Anderson: "Buckley says Welch is a wild extremist. You will be interested in the enclosed letter which bears out what Bob has been saying. Perhaps later events will show that Bob is not extreme enough." The enclosed letter is from JBS Coordinator S.C. Lyons of Dry Branch GA -- copied below:



02/13/62 = Robert Welch "To The Members Of Our Council And The Seven or Eight Friends Regularly Invited to COUNCIL Meetings": "We have no intention of fighting back against the present widespread, and carefully coordinated, attacks on us from the Right. The Communists, with approximately three percent of a population, take over one nation after another and impose the brutal tyranny of that three percent on the other ninety-seven percent. Obviously, they could not do this without beguiling good anti-Communists into carrying the ball, and disparaging or destroying other anti-Communists, for them. We certainly do not wish to help the Communists in this purpose. And so, to the constant barrage of questions from AP, UPI, and others we have answered simply 'No Comment', and we intend to continue doing so."

With respect to the impact which all the critics had on the JBS, Welch claims on page 2 of this document that "in the past nine days -- since I left for California and while the storm was at its worst -- we have received one resignation due to all of the criticism, five resignations from

members in Texas (all of them in one chapter) who want to put their full time and energy into working for General Walker, and no more."

These comments by Welch are significant for several reasons:

- (1) First, it establishes yet again, that what Welch and the JBS have always described as the "smear attack" against the JBS was not just a left-wing phenomenon. Very prominent conservatives also took major exception to the viewpoints expressed by Welch and the JBS.
- (2) Second, Welch's comment regarding how Communists "beguile good anti-Communists" into "disparaging or destroying other anti-Communists for them" is an argument that easily could apply to the Birch Society itself. In fact, one of the most frequent themes expressed in letters addressed to J. Edgar Hoover from concerned citizens around the country was to inquire whether or not the FBI considered the JBS to be a genuine patriotic anti-Communist organization. Many letter-writers expressed the sentiment that perhaps the JBS was a Communist-front organization whose purpose was to confuse, attack, and demoralize legitimate anti-Communist forces in the U.S.
- (3) Third, Welch's rejection of ALL criticisms directed toward himself and the JBS is a perfect circular argument. His formula provides a permanent flawless intellectual escape hatch from ever acknowledging error. Every adverse comment or adverse development is always characterized as part of a plot by Communists to destroy both him and the JBS.

Welch also predicted that Richard Nixon "is in serious trouble. He may lose the nomination for the California governorship to Joe Shell. If he wins the nomination there is even more chance that he will lose the election to Pat Brown. In either case his political career would be over."

Nixon went on to win the nomination over Shell with 65% of the Republican vote. He did lose to Pat Brown (by only 5%) but his political career certainly was not over -- since a few years later he became President of the United States!

03/10/62 = T. Coleman Andrews announced his resignation at the JBS Council meeting in Chicago. However, by letter to Robert Welch dated 3/29/62, he withdrew the resignation: "After further consideration given in response to your request and that of other members of the Council, I have decided to withdraw my resignation...I agree, however, that more than one question of principle is involved, particularly that the resignation of anyone from the Council at this time would be incorrectly construed by the critics of yourself and the Council and the public would be unaware of what the true reasons might be. As everyone well knows, I don't think the John Birch Society has anything to apologize for to anyone. On the contrary, I feel that we have everything to be proud of. The reason we have come under attack is that we have been effective."

It appears that Andrews decided to resign from the Council on at least three occasions but he always changed his mind. A March 16, 1962 letter to Andrews from fellow Council member M.T. Phelps states that the reason why Andrews had tendered his resignation from the Council was related to Robert Welch's statements and conclusions in his "private letter", *The Politician*.

Phelps told Andrews: "Let us assume that the conclusion reached was unreasonable and wholly unjustified. As we all know it was an opinion expressed before the John Birch Society was organized and I suspect 90% or more of the membership do not agree with it and even though Mr. Welch is still of the same view, as long as he does not publicize it and in view of the fact that so much depends on the growth of conservatism in the United States, I want to urge you to remain in the organization. Your resignation would weaken the Society very much." JBS Council members A.G. Heinsohn, W.B. McMillan, and Louis Ruthenberg also write Andrews to ask him to reconsider his resignation. McMillan also addresses Andrews' concern over Welch's comments about Eisenhower. "We who were at Indianapolis know full well that Bob's statement with respect to Eisenhower was never accepted by those present and was never a part of The John Birch Society by specific action at that time, and I think it was highly unfortunate that he made the I felt somewhat uncalled for statement the other day on the same subject, but again, I certainly don't expect everybody to agree with every conclusion I have personally reached when someone else with the same set of facts come to a different conclusion, and that is about what this situation amounts to."

03/13/62 = After the conservative magazine, *National Review*, published its highly critical article about Robert Welch and the Birch Society (see 2/13/62 entry above), JBS National Council member A.G. Heinsohn Jr. wrote a sarcastic letter to *National Review* editor, William F. Buckley, Jr. -- copied below.

03/16/62 = JBS National Council member Spruille Braden sends a letter to Council member Clarence Manion which reveals the disagreement among National Council members concerning the role which Robert Welch should play in the JBS. The harsh criticisms of Welch by Sen. Barry Goldwater, Sen. John Tower, and *National Review* magazine (among other prominent conservatives) triggers a major discussion among JBS National Council members. Braden's letter to Manion is copied below, along with a similar letter to Robert H. Montgomery. In February 1963, Braden resigned from the National Council.

03/16/62 = After a March 10, 1962 JBS National Council meeting, Council member Robert H. Montgomery sends Tom Anderson a letter containing a proposed Council statement expressing support for Welch which was to be published in the April 1962 *JBS Bulletin*. In its customary fashion -- all criticism of Welch or the JBS is characterized as "*Communist-inspired*".



04/02/62 = Council member Fred Koch letter to Robert Welch: "Dear Bob: I heartily concur with Tom Anderson's letter in which he suggests putting out the truth about the John Birch Society. We have been on the defensive too long." Koch referred to a 3/30/62 letter by Anderson to Robert Welch in which he stated: "For a long while I have had the feeling that the John Birch Society should publish a paperback book to give the truth about the John Birch Society...Several Council members could collaborate on the book--or maybe it would be a good idea to have Council member write one chapter...The suggested title would be something like 'The Truth About The John Birch Society'...We have been too much on the defensive. Too long have we sat by and allowed the opposition to publish their lies and misinformation, unchallenged."

05/07/62 = Welch "To All Members Of The COUNCIL" - announces that the following individuals were being invited to attend the next Council meeting at Union League Club in Chicago on Saturday, May 26, 1962: Capt. Edward V. Rickenbacker, Ezra Taft Benson, Strom Thurmond, and H.L. Hunt.

05/17/62 = JBS National Council member Paul H. (Tex) Talbert (Beverly Hills CA) sends a letter to Cola G. Parker of Neenah WI with carbon copies to all other JBS National Council members concerning the forthcoming publication of a Report on the Birch Society resulting from a 2-year investigation by the California Senate Factfinding Subcommittee on Un-American Activities. This Subcommittee conducted the only official governmental investigation ever made of the JBS. The Report was ultimately released in 1963 with an update in the Subcommittee's 1965 Report.

The Report was completed April 1, 1962. However, that same week, one Subcommittee member died and another was hospitalized. The California Senate adjourned before the Subcommittee (including one new member) could vote on authorizing release of the Report. However, Paul Talbert obtained an advance copy. He told Cola Parker that....

"I am convinced the report is good and too favorable to the John Birch Society. The natural conclusion is that it was too 'hot' to handle for an election year and too devastating against Governor Brown and Attorney General Mosk. I talked to the Chief Investigator for the Committee yesterday for an hour and am to meet him in Los Angeles next week for further consultation. Confidentially, I can state that he is 100% on our side." [The Chief Investigator was Richard E. Combs.]

05/28/62 = Welch "To All Members Of The COUNCIL": "As recommended by some members of the COUNCIL at our meeting on Saturday, May 26, a special bank account has been opened through which contributions may be made for The John Birch Society without being made to the Society. Whenever or wherever this arrangement may be helpful, checks should be made out simply to Escrow Account No. 78, and mailed either directly to us, or to the County Bank and Trust Company, 515 Massachusetts Avenue, Cambridge 39, Massachusetts. In either case the money will immediately be made available for our use but the name of the Society will not appear on the check, in the endorsement, or anywhere in the transaction so far as the donor is concerned."

06/03/62 = Five members of the JBS National Council [Robert H. Montgomery, Thomas J. Anderson, Stillwell J. Conner, Revilo P. Oliver, and Slobodan M. Draskovich] comprise a panel entitled "Our Council Speaks" to recruit new JBS members and address criticisms of the JBS. The flyer advertising their 6/30/62 appearance in the Flick-Reedy Auditorium (Bensenville IL) describes their purpose as: "This will be the first in a series of educational efforts to carry our story to more and more of the American people. All members are urged to attend and to invite

their concerned friends to attend...Let them hear about the John Birch Society AS IT REALLY IS from the lips of five of its distinguished and able Council members." Significantly, within four years, 2 of the 5 will resign from the Society while making extremely critical remarks about Robert Welch.

A subsequent "Our Council Speaks" event in Columbus, OH in January 1963 was comprised of Clarence E. Manion, T. Coleman Andrews, Robert D. Love, Thomas J. Anderson, and Stillwell J. Conner. Below is copied a JBS flyer about the event which also lists JBS endorsers around the country. Council members who participated in the "Our Council Speaks" programs, were paid a \$300 honorarium according to a 2/14/63 letter by Robert Welch to Crawley F. Joyner III of Richmond VA.



06/12/62 = Cong. John Rousselot enters into the *Congressional Record* a document entitled "Beliefs and Principles of the John Birch Society".

06/25/62 = Former JBS National Council member, Dr. Granville Knight, sends Robert Welch a letter which will give readers an understanding of the underlying mindset by which Birchers interpreted the world in 1962 --- which is remarkably similar in tone and substance to political discourse in year 2011:

"I cannot help but wonder at times as to how effective any person or organization can be without efforts to expose the roots of the conspiracy. You have certainly been vindicated as far as stressing internal subversion is concerned by what has happened in the past year. We obviously have a Fabian Socialist in the White House and he is surrounded by his cohorts...It is quite possible that the international bankers are playing a part in the recent stock market debacle...It seems to me tht we have to deal with Fabian Socialists, the Communists, the international bankers, the illuminati and cooperatives. There seems to be a struggle between these groups for world domination and whether or not they are guided by a small group using all the rest is conjectural. As long as we are at the mercy of the Federal Reserve System and those who control it, together with the slavery of the graduated income tax, there seems to be little hope of making real progress."

07/03/62 = Robert Welch letter to Sen. James Eastland (MS) informs the Senator that the Birch Society has spent several thousand dollars to include with its July 1962 *JBS Bulletin*, a copy of Eastland's speech entitled "Is The Supreme Court Pro-Communist?" which originally was published by The Patrick Henry Group in Richmond VA.

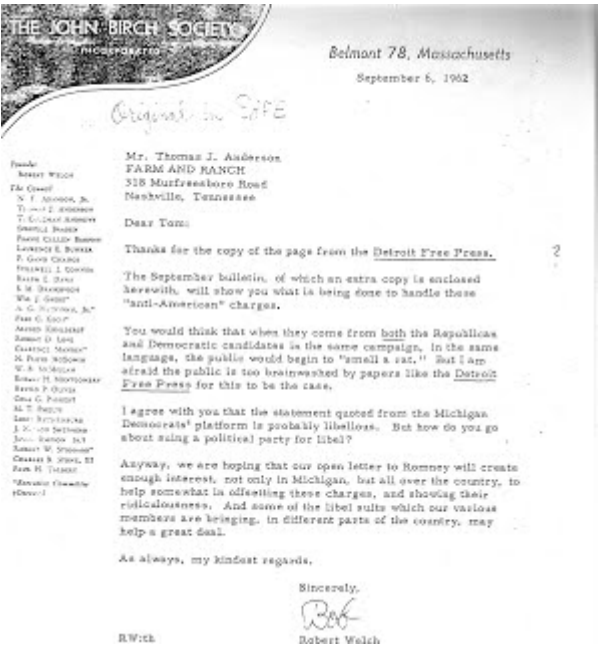
Welch tells Eastland that: "...I agreed one hundred percent" with the statements made by Eastland in the pamphlet. Welch closes his letter with: "So let's hope that this increased distribution---to the very people throughout the country who will be most interested in reading your speech---will bring your great effort an added effectiveness which will make this cost seem well worthwhile. With admiration for both your patriotism and your courage, and with all good wishes, I am, Sincerely, Robert Welch."

JBS praise of, and support for, segregationist politicians like Eastland is one reason why the Birch Society has often been characterized as racist. Significantly, Sen. Eastland sought and received Klan support for his re-election campaigns and according to principals involved, he "pulled strings" to prevent prosecution of Klan members who murdered civil rights workers in 1964. Significantly, this information came from an FBI informant inside the White Knights of the Ku Klux Klan of Mississippi -- the most violent Klan in our country. That FBI informant

(Rev. Delmar Dennis) was a JBS member who remained a segregationist after testifying against Klan members. Dennis subsequently was hired by the JBS as a Coordinator and speaker.

08/14/62 = Tom Anderson sends letter to Robert Welch advising him that as a favor to Ezra Taft Benson he is going to speak under the auspices of All-American Society (founded by former FBI Special Agent and JBS endorser W. Cleon Skousen) in Salt Lake City on September 6th. According to Anderson: "One of the main purposes of this meeting is to help Reed Benson's candidacy for the Congress."

09/06/62 = Criticisms of Welch and the JBS from prominent conservatives around the country were frequent by 1962. In a 9/6/62 letter to Tom Anderson, Welch expresses his frustration over recent comments made by then-Governor George Romney of Michigan:



9/30/62 = At 6:30 am on this date, Ashland F. Burchwell was arrested in Dallas TX by local police for speeding. Upon searching his vehicle, police discovered a large cache of arms and ammunition---including 1000 rounds of .22 caliber ammunition, 2000 rounds of .30-06 rifle ammunition, and a .357 magnum pistol, and an Army rifle.

Burchwell explained to police that he was on his way to Mississippi to aid Governor Ross Barnett's anti-integration position with respect to the University of Mississippi. Dallas police determined that Burchwell worked as a secretary for JBS member, Major Gen. Edwin A. Walker, who was also in Mississippi to protest integration of Old Miss. Burchwell served in Walker's U.S. Army Division in Germany before Walker was relieved of his command.

The Dallas Police Criminal Intelligence Section sent a report to their local Army Intelligence office which stated that they also discovered in Burchwell's car, a small cardboard file box plus 5x8 index cards which listed names, addresses, and phone numbers plus dues payments and codes pertaining to arms, ammunition, clothing, and supplies for what appeared to be a guerrilla force. Many of the people listed were JBS members or JBS endorsers such as: Dan Smoot, Joseph Grinnan (JBS Coordinator in Dallas), Dr. Medford Evans, Robert E. Hatfield, Robert A. Surrey, Bill Smith (JBS Coordinator), Mrs. Charles Powell.

10/8/62 = Robert Welch memo "To All Members Of Our COUNCIL" discusses the controversy over JBS member, General Edwin A. Walker:

"We have been flooded with letters, telegrams and long distance calls from all over the United States, many of them demanding my individual attention...Roughly two-thirds of these communications are from members -- both influential members and plain hardworking patriots - who think we have 'let Walker down'. These range all the way from those who are mildly disappointed and critical; through those who say that if we are not going to use The John Birch

Society organization to back General Walker then they are going to form separate organizations of their own for that specific purpose; to those who insisted the time had come to get out the guns, march to Springfield, Missouri, and rally behind a great patriotic General who was determined to save his country while there was still time." ...

"But from the point of view of the Society, there are still other factors involved, some of which we do not think it wise to discuss specifically even here. For one thing, General Walker has not only been guided by the advice of Medford Evans and, increasingly of late and especially with regard to the Mississippi situation, of Evetts Haley, and not only does that advice seem to many of us to leave much to be desired in the matter of soundness; but much more recently Walker has also been listening to advice from another source, and refusing to pay any attention to those who have tried to caution him about this source, and it is one which we do not trust at all, even as to good intentions. There is, in our opinion, danger of some very serious embarrassment to a lot of good Conservatives and even to the Conservative cause in general, if Walker continues to listen to that advice, or takes any overt actions based on it, or even merely gets himself definitely associated with this source. And since General Walker is noted for his obstinacy, we have to be as careful as we can not to let ourselves be dragged into this association in any way, even at the expense of having two thirds of our members angry and many of them even resigning or threatening to do so because we are not giving Walker *'the support which he should have.'* And the report that we have 'abandoned' Walker is now being deliberately spread all over New York City, and among the Conservatives in many other places, to hurt the Society."

NOTE: The "source" whom Welch refers to as exerting a noxious influence upon Walker is a reference to Walker's involvement with the anti-semitic crowd which, at that time, owned *American Mercury* [AM] magazine [first, Russell Maguire and then Gerald Winrod's organization, Defenders of the Christian Faith and later Willis Carto's Legion for the Survival of Freedom. In September 1962, the AM was sold to the Defenders of the Christian Faith and Walker was one of the purchasers. He also became Military Editor for the AM.]

Item #4 in this Welch report discusses "The New Form of Attacks On The Society. Having tried many other methods, the Left has now embarked on a whole series of separate but closely related efforts to weaken and destroy the Society. And our enemies are certainly and subtly pouring on these efforts, everywhere...Another form of the attack is in the extensive, emphatic, and almost violent spread of anti-Semitic theories. In many areas, our members are having it preached directly to them, and indirectly to them through other organizations and in other ways where the direct approach is not practicable...This movement is now so intensive and extensive that there is no doubt in my mind about its being part of a coordinated and carefully planned overall drive to destroy the Society. And because the ordinary American Jews do not realize that they are being just as misled and falsely represented by Communists in their ranks and their leadership, as our Methodists, for instance, by left-wingers high up in the hierarchy of their denomination, or even Catholics by a comparatively few but still very powerful and influential extreme left-wingers in strategic spots even in their clergy, it is fairly easy to inflame a lot of otherwise good Americans into believing the extremist nonsense, putting all of their efforts behind this terribly gross over-simplification of the problem, and giving up all other effort, organized or otherwise, for fighting the Communists. This drive is right now making a lot of damaging headway."

Item #5 by Welch: "Parallel to the above, as a problem increasingly to be faced, is the use by the Communists of agents provocateurs with regard to overt acts, rather than just ideological persuasion to extremism. We have already seen some of this, as in the case of the bombs which were exploded in the homes of the ministers in California--who were speaking on radio programs, at the very time, against 'extremists' like The John Birch Society -- in such a manner as to do as little damage as possible to the homes, but as much damage as possible to the Society. This is standard Communist technique--which DeGaulle used brazenly and repeatedly, for instance, to discredit the OAS and other anti-Communists in both Algeria and France itself -- and of which we shall be seeing increasing samples in this country, aimed at anti-Communists in general but some of them at the John Birch Society in particular."

10/27/62 = The JBS issued a press release announcing that Reed A. Benson (eldest son of Ezra Taft Benson) "was appointed today as the Utah Coordinator of the John Birch Society...His father, Ezra Taft Benson, on being questioned regarding his son's decision, stated: *'I have known of my son Reed's interest in The John Birch Society, which he has been studying for several months. I have also read the Blue Book and other basic materials of the Society and have met the leaders and several prominent Americans who are members. The organization is, I am convinced, the most effective non-church organization in our fight against creeping socialism and godless Communism. I admire Reed's courage and applaud his decision.'*"

12/11/62 = George S. Birch, the father of John Birch, writes to the Editor of the *Atlanta Constitution* newspaper (Eugene Patterson) because of comments in a published article about the circumstances of his son's death. Mr. and Mrs. George Birch were life members of the Birch

C
O
P
Y

Birmingham
Suite #1
Aston, Ala.

December 11, 1963

Mr. Eugene Patterson
Editor, The Atlanta Constitution
Atlanta, Ga.

Dear Sir:

With reference to the column by Marvin Bell on page 4 of the December 10th issue of the Atlanta Constitution, I question the veracity of certain statements.

As the father of John Birch, I understand that I am entitled to know the ultimate source and proof of the statements in question, enumerated below:

(1) "...As was sent to Gurnee to check on Japanese strength there."
(2) "When he got there, Birch found the Japanese surrounded by Chinese Communists."
(3) "Going beyond his orders, Birch sought to arrange a surrender of the Japanese."
(4) "When he staged a guard..."
(5) "He...was no longer capable of thinking rationally."

I expect immediate acknowledgement (stamped, self-addressed envelope enclosed), and either proof or public retraction, giving exact space and probabilities, within fifteen days.

Yours very truly,

George C. Birch

cc to General A. C. Wedemeyer
General Richard H. Sles III
Honorable Richard A. Russell
Jim Jackson, Sam and Harold
Fulton Lewis, Jr.
Catherine Austin
Tim Smith
Samuel Francis
Aurilio Daily News
Jack Wythe, JUNE
George Dave Arnold
Allent Smith
and others

"General Albert C. Wedemeyer has refused to join the John Birch Society and has accused its founder, Robert H.W. Welch Jr., of distorting the circumstances surrounding the death of the Society's namesake, according to a North American Newspaper Alliance report.

As Mr. Welch tells the story, John Birch, a missionary turned Army intelligence officer, was killed by Chinese Communists 10 days after the end of World War II. He has described him as *'the first casualty'* of the cold war and has charged the Pentagon with attempting to suppress the facts of the Birch case at the behest of hidden pro-Soviet forces.

'That just isn't true' says Gen. Wedemeyer, who was the American commander in China at the time of Birch's death. 'I just can't believe that the case was hushed up. I had sent a full report to Washington at the time. As I recall, I reported that the unfortunate episode had been provoked by Birch's arrogant behavior toward a Communist patrol.'

"General Wedemeyer said Birch 'was only one of a number of brave courageous Americans who were killed in one incident or another about the same time. Why Birch should have been singled out for special attention is beyond my comprehension.' "

General Albert Wedemeyer (Newsweek, 12/4/61)

"I knew John Birch, as a captain in China, when I was out there during the war. Birch was one of a number of men who participated in operations in China, parachuted behind enemy lines. He provoked the attack on himself; he was arrogant. I warned Welch not to make a hero of Birch. That's why I quit as an adviser. I think Welch is a dedicated, fine American but he lacks good judgment."

12/26/62 = National Council member William J. Grede sends letters to other Council members

announcing the formation of a National Finance Committee for the JBS, of which he is Chairman. Grede observed: "In the four years since the Society was founded it has, we believe, already become the strongest and most effective anti-Communist group in the United States, and certainly the one which the Communist themselves fear the most." The initial Finance Committee memo is copied below:



1963

1/17/63 = Thomas J. Davis, a JBS Major Coordinator headquartered in Stamford CT, sent a 7-page single-spaced typed letter to Robert Welch to explain why he and other JBS officials had terminated the employment of Richmond VA JBS Coordinator George S. Petley because "he was not suited for this work".

Petley had replaced Bryton Barron in June 1961. Barron resigned from the JBS after making very derogatory statements about Robert Welch (see my former entry regarding the Barron matter.) The controversy over Petley's dismissal resulted in several letters to/from Robert Welch and National Council member T. Coleman Andrews, a friend of Petley, along with letters from many JBS members who were displeased with the manner in which Petley was treated.

Davis met with local chapter members and his letter to Welch reported that: "The members were quite concerned over the manner in which George was dropped, and charged that we were ruthless in our handling of the matter; that George was an excellent leader, and that his territory was very difficult...At that meeting, I stayed with our official version of the reason for his release, namely, that we could not maintain Coordinators who did not sufficiently build the membership of the Society in their area." Attached to the Davis letter to Welch was a detailed report regarding Petley's deficiencies. Among the problems, according to Davis, is that Petley appointed a Section Leader in one Virginia city who not only was totally unsuited for that position but "much more serious, he was anti-Semitic and made these attitudes known to the membership, and passed out quantities of material of which the Society totally disapproved."

A subsequent report by Thomas N. Hill and William E. Dunham mentions that when Petley started in 1961, the JBS had 15 chapters in Virginia and when he was terminated (in 1963) there were 19. Petley started four chapters in Maryland.

In a January 23, 1963 letter to Petley, Robert Welch stated:

"It seemed to me, as I first began to be worried about the Virginia situation many months ago -- and after having had such high hopes for what you could accomplish when we first sent you there -- that the basic trouble was immaturity of judgment. One of the earliest indications of this was your recommendation, when you thought you and your efforts were being hurt by rumors

03/14/63 = T. Coleman Andrews sends a letter to Robert Welch to announce, yet again, that he plans to resign from the JBS National Council. On April 4, 1963, Welch replies and tells Andrews "we simply could not afford to lose you as a member of our COUNCIL -- especially at the present time, when we are just beginning to make such remarkable headway again..." On April 11, Andrews replies by agreeing to wait until the next Council meeting when he can "discuss the matter with other members of the Council and reach a decision." He subsequently decides to remain on the Council.

08/01/63 = Robert Welch "*To Members of the COUNCIL*": Welch sends each Council member a suggested letter which he asks them to send to Ezra Taft Benson, Capt. Eddie Rickenbacker, Sen. Strom Thurmond and Charles Edison – in order to encourage each of the 4 men to accept Welch's invitation to become members of the JBS National Council.

[illegible][illegible]

[illegible]

See also: [Flight a world of new ideas](#)

The commentators are using all the experience of the ages and all the techniques of modern child-rearing (feeding and toilet-training, for the full size of entering society to achieve reacting in arbitrarily created stimuli). They are in

[illegible][illegible]

He then complains about Council meetings "where no room is left for proper criticism and discussion of issues and strategy". Draskovich declares that the JBS is "being weakened by our timidity, our tediousness, by our frightened search for recognition, respectability, and acceptance..." to the point where "the JBS is evidently and progressively failing in its mission. The relationship of forces between the communist conspiracy and the forces of Americanism, which in the months and few first years following the creation of the JBS was turning in our favor, is again turning against us. The knowledge about the communist conspiracy is growing, but the faith in victory, in the imperative need to do our utmost and invest everything we have into the battle, is definitely disappearing. And this is because the JBS promise that it means business all the way has acquired a hollow ring, unrelated to our actual policies. We are not doing our utmost to alarm, to arouse, to infuriate, to inspire, to organize and to lead the American people into the decisive battles toward victory."

Draskovich continues: “The enemy is acting and training all the time and keeping in shape for any coming eventuality. We are not acting and we are not ready for action, we are not keeping in fighting trim for the decisive engagements which are before us. Has our leadership thought about the problems and situations most likely to face us in the immediate future, has it worked out plans and prepared its members to meet the emergencies?”

Among the problems which Draskovich lists as distinct possibilities:

“What do we do if we are exposed to physical violence, to beatings, individual and collective? What do we do if it comes to a racial civil war, fostered and encouraged by the New Frontier? What do we do if we are jailed on whatever ground or without any ground, as General Walker was several months ago? Do we keep \$50,000 bail money ready for every member of the JBS?”
...

“If we had ten, twenty, thirty or more years before us, all of this would not be so urgent. But, as everybody knows, especially in the JBS, very little time remains. We see the enemies’ whites of their eyes, but instead of shooting and beating them back and inflicting them an irreparable defeat, we let them infiltrate our ramparts and wreak havoc, while we play Sunday school teachers to the American people. We are having nice, harmless tea parties against the criminals and traitors.”

1964

2/9/64 = National Council member Revilo P. Oliver sends a 4-page “Confidential” letter to Council member Tom Anderson (copied below) which advocates creation of a Board of Strategy for the JBS. Oliver contends that five National Council members had agreed about the need for such a Board at the recent National Council meeting in Chicago.

Oliver lists 9 reasons why such a Board is necessary. He devotes the most space to discussion of comments made over the name of Robert Welch in a lengthy pamphlet entitled “The Neutralizers” which, writes Oliver, was “seriously diminishing our prestige through demonstrably erroneous or grossly inaccurate statements of fact and highly improbable allegations that we are acting as a cat’s paw for the Defamation League [Anti-Defamation League of B’nai B’rith] which is one of the most viciously anti-American criminal gangs in the country and is widely (and not implausibly) suspected of being an arm of the Communist Conspiracy”.

This letter is significant for several reasons, chief among them the fact that Oliver did not disguise his obvious anti-semitic sentiments.

The idea of Strategy Committee for the JBS was adopted. The first members were: Tom Anderson, Milorad (aka Dan) Draskovich, Robert Love, Clarence (aka Pat) Manion, and Revilo Oliver. See 3/6/64 entry below for additional information.



- 4 -

Dr. Thomas J. Anderson, (Chickamauga, Wisconsin); and I believe that one of the men, if not both, should be present to a part of these proceedings.

(3) A Committee on Strategy to be composed of members of the Council, not to meet at least once each month, preferably in Chicago, with the President, the Executive, and the "outside men" to be designated as per strategy for the Council, and to be representative to the Council for decisions in such matters. It was suggested that for this purpose our present Council be expanded by the inclusion of the following members of the Council, if they are willing to serve: Greig, Goodman, Williams, Cowley. The aim of the Council will make it unnecessary for each member to attend every meeting.

(4) It is desirable that we associate with us in an advisory capacity an eminent national military or naval officer. The above Committee will demand, of course, on the activities of the men whom we are able to attract.

I believe that these recommendations represent the most feasible way of meeting probably the Society's most urgent needs.

Sincerely,
Frank

Dr. Thomas J. Anderson,
1241 Belmont Avenue,
Chickamauga, Tennessee.

"We stayed by that arrangement through many months, Peg, when each of your articles was simply rehashing the same old bitter personal paragraphs about the Roosevelts and the Kennedys and a few of your other betes noirs -- such as members of the Hearst family -- in rambling and repetitive diatribes. You were using our magazine to give vent to your personal spleen in language and in disorganized sequences which I do not believe any other reputable periodical in America would have published. But we did our best to go along with you patiently, despite the fact that these articles were hurting us more than they would have hurt anybody else, because of the intended tone and purpose of *American Opinion*, and because of its great indebtedness to the loyal support of members of The John Birch Society. In fact, Peg, you were steadily tearing down, in many ways, what I had been years in the building."

In his letter to Pegler, Welch provided a lot of data not generally known about himself and the JBS. Some examples:

* As of 2/64, the JBS had 150 employees, a payroll of over \$22,000 per week, printing bills from one printer of over \$12,000 per week

* Welch's book, *May God Forgive Us*, sold 200,000 copies during its first year and his book, *The Life of John Birch* sold 35,000 copies during its first year.

* Welch believed that conservative author/columnist Eugene Lyons "had clearly been responsible for publication of the article by Col. Kintner, in *The Reader's Digest* which -- whatever its title and ostensible theme -- seemed to me to have been written and published primarily for the damage it could to the Society and myself." [Welch refers to Kintner's article in the 5/62 issue of *Reader's Digest* entitled "*The Insidious Campaign To Silence Anti-Communists*" which discussed the JBS in negative terms.]

* As a result of Pegler's attacks upon Eugene Lyons in two articles appearing in *American Opinion* magazine, J.B. Matthews resigned from the masthead of AO.

* Welch claimed that by October 1963, as a consequence of Pegler's vitriolic articles, "we were receiving so much mail from so many of our most influential and most dedicated members of the Society, completely washing their hands of anything further to do with *American Opinion*, that our subscriptions and our newsstand sales...were both dropping off in disturbing fashion. At the very same time, while we were losing money every month on *American Opinion*...we were now suffering even heavier drops in the direct contributions to the Society by these influential and affluent members who had become disgusted or disturbed at the Pegler ramblings. The protests were numerous, and many of them were emphatic. It is my best guess that we lost about ten thousand dollars per month in contributions, for this reason, during the three fall months, October through December."

* The Warren Commission had been appointed "for the obvious and specific purpose of shifting the blame for the assassination onto the 'hatemongers' known as The John Birch Society, and to convince the whole country through a controlled press that we had been and were stirring up hatred which was really responsible for the crime...This deliberate program of the Warren crowd, backed by the full power of the present administration, is an extremely serious matter to tens of thousands of wonderfully patriotic and truly good people in The John Birch Society."

3/6/64 = The JBS Executive Committee received a copy of the Strategy Committee report. One of the recommendations was creation of a 3-person team stationed at JBS HQ in Belmont MA which would approve all major policy decisions involving public relations, *American Opinion* magazine, the *JBS Bulletin*, and JBS finances – thus taking such matters out of the sole control by Robert Welch. The idea was not adopted.

3/11/64 = Eric L. Pridonoff sends out a memo stating that he has become Chairman of the Life Membership Program of the JBS. His memo states that in 1963, the JBS spent \$100,000 for hiring Coordinators and providing them equipment which resulted in a 300% increase in JBS membership in California.

4/64 = Robert Welch asked Council member Tom Anderson to become Southern District Governor for the JBS. Anderson declined the offer by letter dated 4/16/64. He pointed out that he had just returned from a speaking engagement at a District Rotary Convention and "I was told that some people refused to attend my speech because they knew I was a John Bircher. But I did reach many others, who either did not know or did not particularly care. But could I have reached them at all as a paid employee?"

07/64 = The JBS began a recruitment project entitled "*JBS Personal Letter Campaign*". The idea was for members to contact potential supporters by using different types of letters with enclosures which would be coded so that it could be determined which packet was the most effective and productive. One proposed letter enclosed a copy of the JBS reprint "*The Time Has Come*". Another letter enclosed a copy of John Stormer's conspiracy classic 1964 book, *None Dare Call It Treason*. A third letter enclosed a copy of a speech by Ezra Taft Benson.

A final letter enclosed a copy of the published version of Welch's "private letter" entitled *The Politician*. The sample letter for this stated:

“This is the last of the series. I have imposed on your time and your patience in this manner for two important reasons: (1) To emphasize the seriousness with which many thoughtful people now regard the danger to our country from the Communist conspiracy; and (2) to make you aware of the importance of the John Birch Society in the fight against this conspiracy, and of the needs of the Society for greater and more rapid growth. Enclosed with this final letter is another book, *The Politician*. Directly or indirectly, it helps to drive home both points. Read *The Politician* and judge it for yourself. Then judge for yourself the frightening situation, of which only one small part is described by the history in this book. I hope that the result will be a willingness on your part to help us all you can – in what I believe to be the most determined and most effective effort in America to ward off the imminent and tremendous danger to our freedom and our lives.”

8/18/64 = National Council member Tom Anderson sends a letter to John Stormer, author of the 1964 book, *None Dare Call It Treason* which advises Stormer that Anderson mentioned the book in an August column he wrote. By mid-August the number of requests for the book was so great that Anderson asked Stormer for a price quote on 5000 books.

10/28/64 = JBS Public Relations Director John Rousselot sends Robert Welch a list of newspapers which are publishing a JBS advertising supplement -- and the cost for each paper.

October 25, 1964

Mr. Robert Welch
The John Birch Society
P.O. Box 1000
San Francisco, California

Dear Sir:

Enclosed are listed the newspapers to which The John Birch Society has agreed to publish advertising supplements, and the cost to you for each supplement.

Newspaper	Date of Supplement	Circulation	Cost
Alaska Herald	October 25, 1964	500,000	\$10,000
Albuquerque Journal	October 25, 1964	500,000	\$10,000
Arizona Republic	October 25, 1964	150,000	\$3,000
Chicago Tribune	October 25, 1964	1,000,000	\$20,000
Los Angeles Times	October 25, 1964	1,000,000	\$20,000
Minneapolis Star Tribune	October 25, 1964	500,000	\$10,000
San Francisco Chronicle	October 25, 1964	1,000,000	\$20,000
Seattle Times	October 25, 1964	500,000	\$10,000
St. Louis Globe-Democrat	October 25, 1964	500,000	\$10,000
Washington Post	October 25, 1964	1,000,000	\$20,000

Mr. Robert Welch
October 25, 1964
Page 2

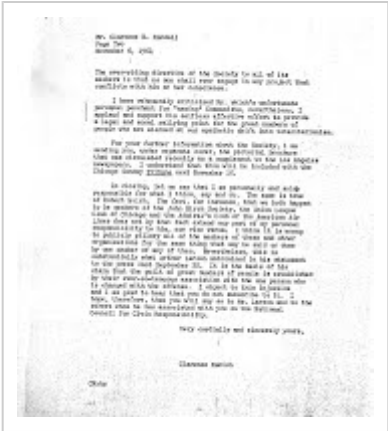
Newspaper	Date of Supplement	Circulation	Cost
Alaska Herald	November 1, 1964	500,000	\$10,000
Chicago Tribune	November 1, 1964	1,000,000	\$20,000
Los Angeles Times	November 1, 1964	1,000,000	\$20,000
San Francisco Chronicle	November 1, 1964	1,000,000	\$20,000
Seattle Times	November 1, 1964	500,000	\$10,000
St. Louis Globe-Democrat	November 1, 1964	500,000	\$10,000
Washington Post	November 1, 1964	1,000,000	\$20,000
TOTAL:		6,500,000	\$130,000

Enclosed herewith is a check for \$130,000 to cover the cost of the advertising supplements for the November 1, 1964 issue.

John E. Rousselot
Director - Public Relations
JBS
cc: "Grand Strategy"

11/06/64 = JBS National Council member Clarence Manion responds to an inquiry from a friend who asked him if he agreed with Robert Welch's comments about President Eisenhower. In reply, Manion quoted a comment he made about Welch's evaluation of Eisenhower on a Chicago TV program (letter copied below):

"I certainly do repudiate any statement by Mr. Welch or by anybody else to the effect that President Eisenhower was a knowing member of the Communist conspiracy." Manion added: "I have always regarded any such statement as unwise and untrue and I have been quoted in the press to that effect on many occasions."



11/18/64 – 11/23/64 = J. Edgar Hoover holds an unusual 3-hour press conference on 11/18/64. During this conference he answers questions about the just-released Warren Commission Report on the assassination of President Kennedy, plus other subjects.

A reporter asked Hoover about his opinion of Robert Welch. Welch replied that he had no respect for Welch.

FBI Associate Director Clyde Tolson recognizes the impact which Hoover's statement is likely to have -- so he sends Hoover a memo on 11/20 asking for his approval to use a standard reply to the anticipated deluge of inquiries which the FBI expected to receive about the matter. Tolson's memo is copied below. Hoover handwrote "Yes" on Tolson's suggested wording.

Subsequently, both Robert Welch and JBS PR Director John Rousselot wrote to Hoover to inquire if press reports about Hoover's comment concerning Welch were accurate. Copied below is Welch's 11/20/64 letter plus Hoover's 11/23/64 reply.

[illegible][illegible]



JBS FINANCIAL STATEMENT 12/31/64

The following scanned items are copies of the Financial Reports prepared by the Birch Society's CPA firm, Spark, Mann and Company of Boston MA.

The Birch Society was comprised of several corporate entities. The first document is on the JBS itself -- then the second document pertains to Robert Welch, Inc. -- the publishing arm of the Society.

I have additional financial reports which the JBS submitted to the Commonwealth of Massachusetts -- which I will scan and post in the future.



<https://sites.google.com/site/ernie1241b/> [10-Aug-17 10:47:41 AM]

[illegible]

CHAPTER.....Time Period.....URL

JBS 9-1 / 01/58 thru 08/11/60 = <https://sites.google.com/site/ernie1241/>

JBS 9-2 / 09/60/60 thru 12/15/61 = <https://sites.google.com/site/ernie1241a/>

JBS 9-3 / 01/62 thru 12/31/64 = <https://sites.google.com/site/ernie1241b/>

JBS 9-4 / 01/65 thru 12/31/65 = <https://sites.google.com/site/jbs9004/>

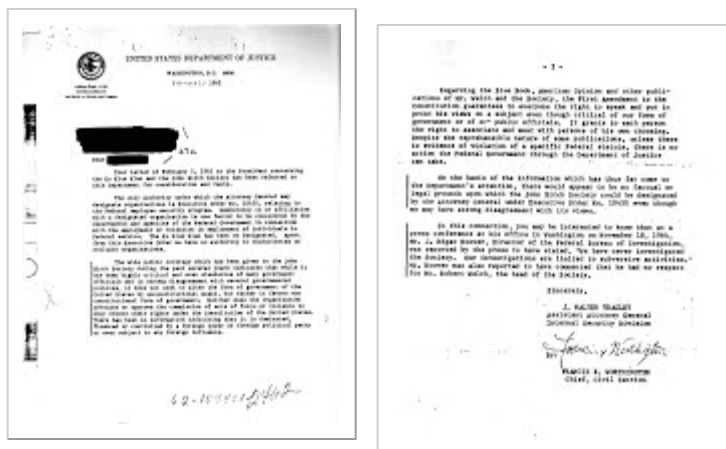
JBS 9-5 / 01/66 thru current = <https://sites.google.com/site/jbs9005a/>

DOCUMENTARY HISTORY OF THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY

1965

02/19/65 = The President, the FBI and the Justice Department received thousands of letters inquiring or complaining about the Birch Society. Many times, correspondents wanted to know why the Birch Society was not designated as a subversive organization--just like the Ku Klux Klan.

J. Walter Yeagley (Assistant Attorney General, Internal Security Division of the Justice Department) answered one such inquiry in February 1965, copied below.



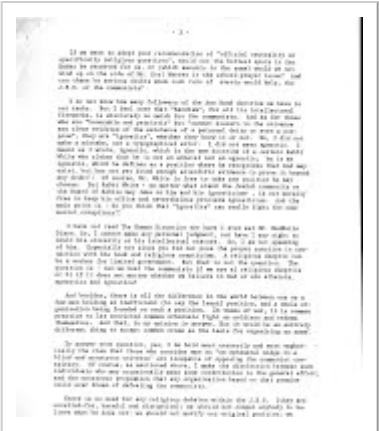
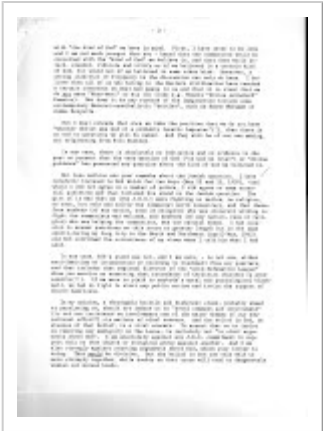
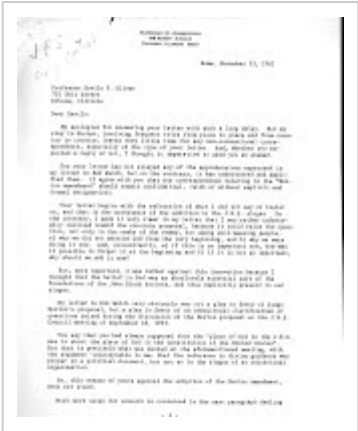
10/11/65 = JBS Public Relations Director John Rousselot addressed a Testimonial Dinner for Mr. and Mrs. Robert Welch in Los Angeles. Among the accomplishments of the JBS which Rousselot listed were: "340 bookstores across the country, 75 full-time field men; over 100 books on many subjects; the official magazine [of the JBS, *American Opinion*] has over 50 thousand circulation; over one thousand lectures and speakers are scheduled for the coming year..."

11/04/65 = JBS National Council member Dr. Thomas Parker sent a letter to Robert Welch to address the ongoing debate within the JBS about whether or not the official JBS motto should be revised to include the phrase "under God". Parker's letter is copied below. Parker's letter is significant because aside from the substantive matter under consideration it reveals the omnipresent mindset within the JBS -- i.e. that the JBS will always be under "attack" by "enemies". In short, there is never a legitimate, honorable, alternative, competing point of view.



11/23/65 = National Council member Slobodan Draskovich corresponded with fellow Council member Revilo Oliver about the proposal to add the phrase *"under God"* to the official JBS motto. This letter is significant because, once again, it reveals the mindset at senior levels of the Society with respect to perceiving the unsavory character of ALL of its opponents of the JBS.

Oddly, while National Council members welcomed the input of Revilo Oliver on the *"under God"* matter, it appears they did not know that Oliver was a virulent atheist. In subsequent years, Oliver wrote essays for a neo-nazi magazine (*Liberty Bell*) which compared Christianity to spiritual syphilis!



12/09/65 = The JBS 7th Anniversary Testimonial Dinner is held at the Edgewater Beach Hotel in Chicago IL. The Master of Ceremonies was G. Edward Griffin. Griffin established one the first chapters of the JBS in the Los Angeles area and he served as a Chapter Leader, Section Leader, and a Major Coordinator. He also headed the Audio-Visual Department of the JBS. Griffin was designated by Robert Welch as one of only four individuals who could serve as official spokesmen for the JBS. The other three were Robert Welch, John Rousselot, and Reed Benson.

An official JBS pamphlet produced for this event stated that:
"The Society now has from a few to several hundred chapters in each of the forty-eight continental states and Alaska. It has Home Chapter members in all fifty states and in many foreign countries. It has between 240

and 250 employees, including a field staff of between seventy and seventy-five Coordinators and Major Coordinators, with a total payroll of between \$35,000 and \$40,000 per week. It has hundreds of Section Leaders, plus thousands of Chapter Leaders who devote a tremendous amount of time and effort to the Society without any pay, even as to their expenses."

12/13/65 = JBS member Ben Klassen of Pompano Beach FL makes arrangements for JBS National Council member Tom Anderson to speak under the auspices of the JBS Speakers Bureau before the Fact Finders Forum of Broward County (Ft. Lauderdale FL) on 1/13/66. Klassen would later resign from the Society with a very caustic denunciation of Robert Welch for his dumbing-down of JBS members so that they did not recognize the "Jewish" component of the Master Conspiracy.

Klassen went on to found the racist and anti-semitic Church of the Creator and the Nationalist White Party. In 1970, he co-authored a pamphlet entitled "*50 Phony Arguments Used By Kosher Conservatives To Confuse Gentiles*" in which he declared that "**communism is a Jewish conspiracy created to destroy the white race through mongrelization, annihilation, and degeneration.**"

Due to Google sites space limitations, the *Documentary History of the John Birch Society* is on 5 webpages here:

CHAPTER.....Time Period.....URL

JBS 9-1 / 01/58 thru 08/11/60 = <https://sites.google.com/site/ernie1241/>

JBS 9-2 / 09/60/60 thru 12/15/61 = <https://sites.google.com/site/ernie1241a/>

JBS 9-3 / 01/62 thru 12/31/64 = <https://sites.google.com/site/ernie1241b/>

JBS 9-4 / 01/65 thru 12/31/65 = <https://sites.google.com/site/jbs9004/>

JBS 9-5 / 01/66 thru current = <https://sites.google.com/site/jbs9005a/>

JBS-5

Documentary History of the John Birch Society

1966

1966 was arguably the most eventful and traumatic year in JBS history up to that time. Although not all details are currently known, there were numerous incidents which revolved around JBS members and JBS bookstores which circulated literature authored by anti-semitic sources. In addition, there was a major debate within the Society over the leadership of Robert Welch.

~~~~~

02/14-15/66 = Robert Welch sent a memo to Donald R. Gray, the Business Manager of the Birch Society's Wholesale Book Division, concerning Gray's 2/14/66 memo to American Opinion bookstores. In his memo, Gray advises JBS bookstores about the type of "anti-semitic" material which should not be sold in AO bookstores.

According to Gray's instructions, "...most of the books and pamphlets with an anti-Semitic flavor which we omit from our booklist are not of sufficient value in substance or scholarship to rise above the level of anti-Semitic invective or propaganda. Frankly, in our opinion, this applies to most of the books or pamphlets by Marilyn Allen, Richard Cotten, Myron Fagan, Kenneth Goff, Wickliffe Vennard, Eustace Mullins, Gerald K. Smith, Robert H. Williams and Benjamin Freedman."

In his memo, Robert Welch claims that in February 1966, the Birch Society had "several hundred" Jewish members. It is not clear how he could know this since JBS membership applications do not have a field for entry of religious heritage and the JBS did not allow scholars to survey JBS members in order to construct a factual summary of demographic data regarding their membership.

Welch referred to the recent publication by the Anti-Defamation League of its 112-page book entitled "Report on The John Birch Society 1966". Welch presents a blame-the-victim type of argument: "...one purpose of the ADL in publishing this recent booklet is to try to make us and our members actually anti-Semitic. Whole booklet...shows that they are now out to try to destroy the John Birch Society at any cost, and practically by any means. And they would certainly consider driving us into anti-Semitic feelings as one way of doing so."

Thus, in the JBS scheme of things, when JBS members (by word or deed) revealed their anti-semitic sentiments, it was the fault of Jewish organizations like ADL for discovering and documenting those incidents. Furthermore, apparently Welch is acknowledging that JBS members would be receptive to believing or circulating anti-semitic arguments -- which is why he thinks that the ADL would expend energy and resources "to try to make us and our members actually anti-Semitic."

This is a constant contradictory theme in JBS argumentation:

One the one hand, the JBS proposes that it is not capable of grievous error or noxious prejudiced beliefs, statements, and conclusions. Only JBS opponents are capable of such profound moral and intellectual deficiencies.

But, on the other hand, one booklet published by ADL containing criticisms of the JBS might easily convince Birchers to believe and disseminate anti-semitic statements.

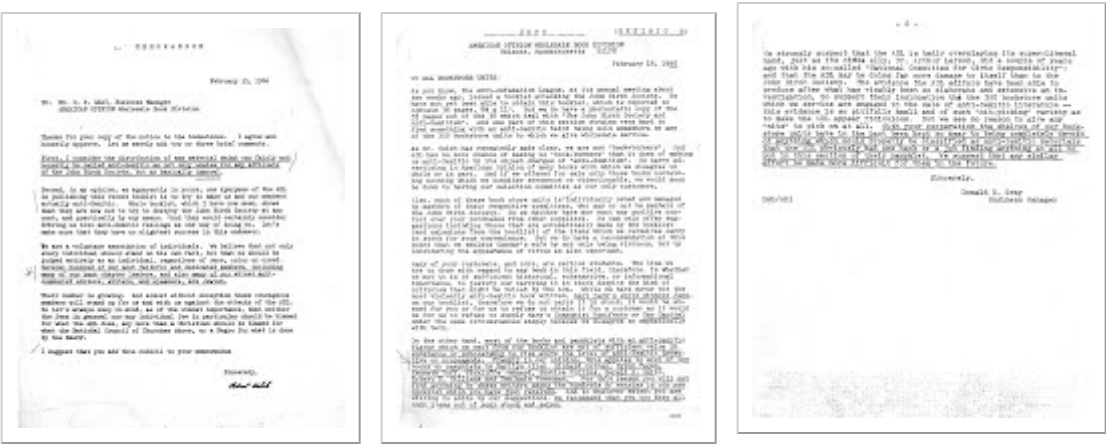


In short, in the JBS scheme of things, racial or religious bigotry does not pre-exist within deeply flawed human beings; instead, it originates in, and is provoked by, the very people who are the targets and victims of such bigotry. Thus---Jews (or other minorities) incite and are to blame for whatever bigotry manifests itself.

Significantly, in July 1966, National Council member Revilo P. Oliver resigned from the JBS as a consequence of statements he made in a July 4th speech at the annual New England Rally For God, Family, and Country. See entry below dated 8/8/66 for Welch memo about this matter.

Oliver's anti-semitic and racist sentiments were known to both Welch and JBS supporters for a long time. In fact, in February 1961, when the FBI contacted its former informant (Herbert A. Philbrick of *I Led 3 Lives* fame) about assertions made by Oliver in a 1959 speech which Oliver attributed to Philbrick, Philbrick told the FBI that he considered Oliver "to be an extremist in anticommunist feelings and violently anti-Semitic."

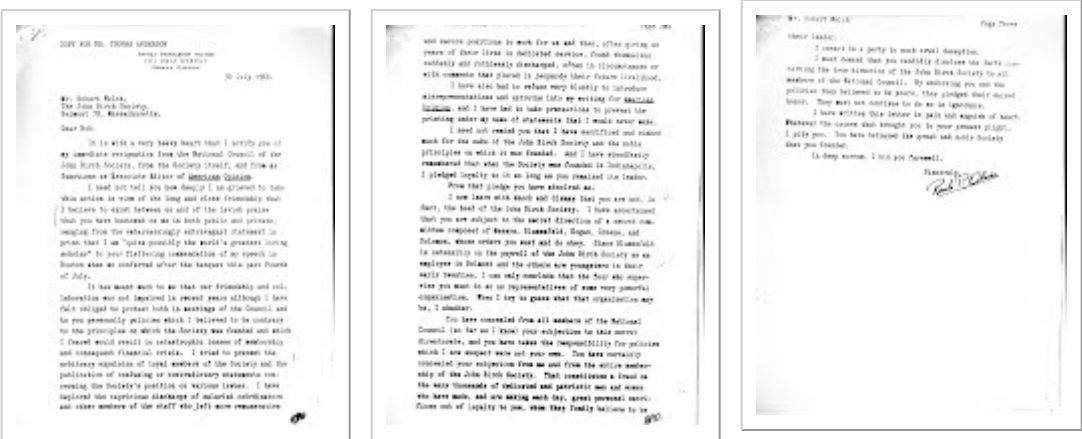
The memos by both Welch and Gray are copied below.



7/5/66 = JBS National Council member Thomas Parker (Greenville SC) sent a letter to Council member Tom Anderson (Nashville TN) encouraging Anderson to support the re-election bid of Senator Strom Thurmond of SC. Thurmond (like Parker and Anderson), was a segregationist.

7/30/66 = National Council member Revilo P. Oliver submits his resignation letter to Robert Welch. In his resignation letter, Oliver makes a startling and absurd accusation which, yet again, reveals Oliver's profound anti-semitic beliefs:

"I now learn with shock and dismay that you are not, in fact, the head of the John Birch Society. I have ascertained that you are subject to the secret direction of a secret committee composed of Messrs. Blumenfeld, Kogan, Greene and Solomon, whose orders you must and do obey. Since Blumenfeld is ostensibly on the payroll of the John Birch Society as an employee in Belmont and the others are youngsters in their early twenties, I can only conclude that the four who supervise you must do so as a representative of some very powerful organization. When I try to guess what the organization may be, I shudder."



8/8/66 = Robert Welch "*To A Number of Friends Who Have Written Us About Dr. Oliver's Speech*" begins by criticizing press coverage of Oliver's July 4th speech for "distortions, exaggerations, and outright falsehoods as to what he actually said."



But, then, even Welch acknowledged the problem:

"Nevertheless, there were parts of the speech which were just as disturbing to us as to anybody else." Welch continued: "...we do not subscribe at all to Dr. Oliver's '*racial superiority*' theories, nor to his views concerning the basic degeneracy of the human race."

Welch closed his memo with a remarkable statement.

Despite Oliver's "racial superiority theories" and his belief in the "basic degeneracy of human race", nevertheless "we have accepted his resignation from the COUNCIL of the Society with a considerable and natural reluctance."

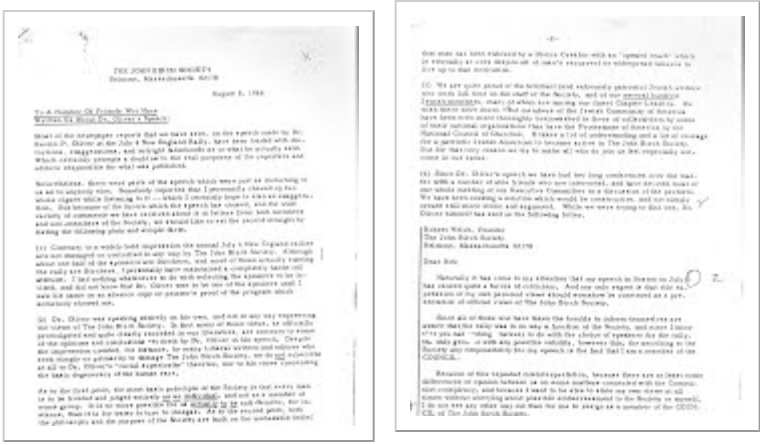
Keep in mind that Welch described as the primary purpose of the JBS National Council to be "To show the caliber of the men who are supporting and helping to run The John Birch Society" Furthermore, membership in the JBS was not just a function of one's anti-communist beliefs. Instead, Welch told the founding meeting of the JBS, that members must be "good patriots, who are also men and women of good will and good character and humane conscience..." [JBS Blue Book, page 165].

Apparently, in Welch's scheme of things, someone who believed in "racial superiority theories" and the "basic degeneracy of the human race" was acceptable material not only as a member but as a senior official within the JBS -- because it was with "a considerable and natural reluctance" that Welch accepted Oliver's resignation. One might add that Oliver was a virulent atheist--which he made known to anybody who wanted to know.

This willingness by Welch to accept outright bigots as members or endorsers of the JBS (as long as they kept their bigotry to themselves so it did not embarrass the JBS) is also apparent from Welch's considerable cordial correspondence with Verne P. Kaub [who headed American Council of Christian Laymen--Madison WI] plus the friendly tone of Welch's correspondence with Gerald L.K. Smith.

It also explains why Welch accepted as members (and even as National Council members or paid employees of the JBS), individuals who were life-long segregationists [T. Coleman Andrews, A.G. Heinsohn, Dr. Thomas Parker, and Tom Anderson] not to mention the politicians or other prominent Americans whom Welch and the JBS effusively praised despite their life-long racist beliefs -- such as Sen. James O. Eastland (MS), Gov. George Wallace (AL), Gov. Ross Barnett (MS) or Gen. Edwin A. Walker (TX) -- and numerous others connected to the White Citizens Councils movement or to other white supremacy organizations -- such as Dr. Medford Evans, Louis Hollis, W.J. Simmons, Rev. Delmar Dennis, and Rev. Ferrell Griswold.

**Welch 8/8/66 memo regarding Oliver resignation:**



08/09/66 = Chicago JBS National Council member, Slobodan Draskovich [SD], was one of four men whom Welch once described as among the most knowledgeable, perceptive, and authoritative sources regarding the communist movement and how to fight it. It must, therefore, have been a major shock for Welch when he received SD's 10-page resignation letter -- especially coming so soon after Revilo Oliver's resignation the month before. Welch had described Oliver in the March 1965 issue of the JBS magazine *American Opinion*, as "an authentic genius of the first water, and quite possibly the world's greatest living scholar."

The opening paragraph of SD's letter:

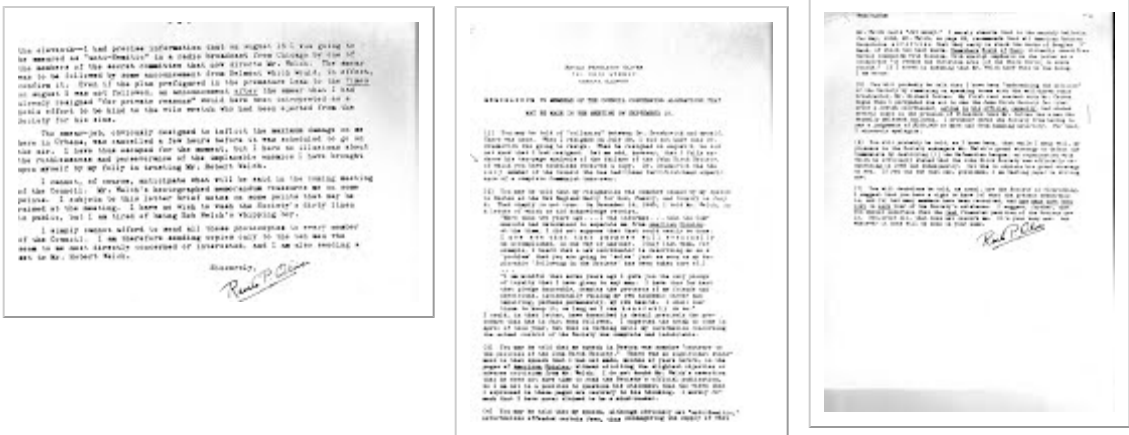
"After reading this latest (August 1966) monthly Bulletin, especially the first page, it becomes more evident than ever to me that the John Birch Society, with you at its helm, is beyond salvation."

SD's letter is copied below:



attached a copy of his press release concerning his resignation -- copied below.

08/23/66 = Revilo Oliver "*To Certain Members of the Council of the John Birch Society*":  
Oliver explains his JBS resignation: "**For almost two years I have been perturbed--as I know some of you gentlemen have been--by the ever increasing ineffectiveness and internal disintegration of the John Birch Society. I became convinced that there was something seriously wrong in Belmont and undertook an investigation, utilizing various special sources of information available to me.**" Oliver then goes on to give his explanation of the events that led to his resignation -- copied below.



10/10/66 = Robert Welch writes letter to Tom Anderson in which he states that the JBS "owed the banks approximately half a million dollars; with my name, of course, on every piece of paper. This was primarily because I had been keeping my eye on the size of the job we've got to do, instead of on how to cut back our organizational base so as to me more comfortable."

1967

01/67 = The Jewish Society of Americanists is formed with HQ in New York City. It is composed of Jewish members of the Birch Society. However, it quickly fades into oblivion with little or no known membership or activities. The officers are:

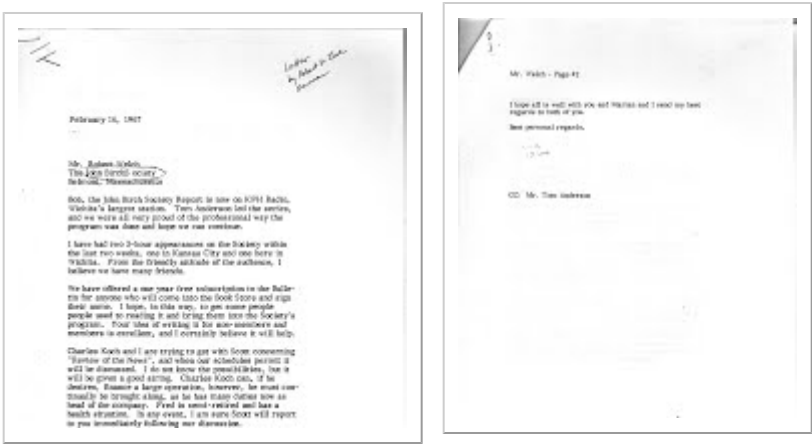
Chairman - Michael S. Kogan

Vice-Chairman = Samuel L. Blumenfeld

Executive Secretary = W.C. Solomon

02/16/67 = JBS National Council member Robert D. Love sends a letter to Robert Welch advising him that he and Charles Koch anticipate meeting with Scott Stanley Jr., the editor of the JBS magazine, *Review of the News*.

According to Love: "[Charles Koch can, if he desires, finance a large operation, however, he must continually be brought along, as he has many duties now as head of the company.](#)" About a year later, Love and Koch place a full-page advertisement in the *Wichita KS Eagle* newspaper calling upon our national leaders to withdraw U.S. forces from Vietnam. Both Love and Koch subsequently resign from the Birch Society.



3/29/67 = Robert Welch "[To All Members Of Our Field Staff](#)": Welch explains to field staff that the JBS provided gummed mailing labels containing JBS member names/addresses to a new political group, The 1976 Committee.

The 1976 Committee was created to launch "[a 10-year crusade to assure a conservative executive branch of the Federal Government.](#)" Its initial 16-page brochure declared that there were "[tremendously powerful and solidly entrenched forces at work right here on American soil, which are determined to abolish our nation's independence](#)" and which wanted to "[make this once great country simply a group of provinces under a one-world socialist government](#)" which, it predicted, "[at their present rate of progress...they will have accomplished their aims completely in 1976.](#)"

The Committee endorsed Ezra Taft Benson for President and Sen. Strom Thurmond for Vice President in 1968 election.

Of 34 officers and members of original Committee, 14 were JBS National Council members: Anderson, Andrews, Brown, Bunker, Grede, Heinsohn, Koch, Manion, McGowin, McMillan, Montgomery, Parker, Stoddard, and Stone.

In addition, K.G. Bentson, Robert Dresser and Charles Edison were members of 1976 Committee and also served on the Editorial Advisory committee for the Birch Society magazine, *American Opinion*.

JBS National Council member Clarence (Pat) Manion handwrote a comment on Welch's memo that Welch "[apparently missed the whole point. The John Birch Society is not a political organization \(I thought\).](#)"



10/26/67 = JBS National Council member A.G. Heinsohn Jr. responds to a critical article about the JBS published by the *Wall Street Journal*.

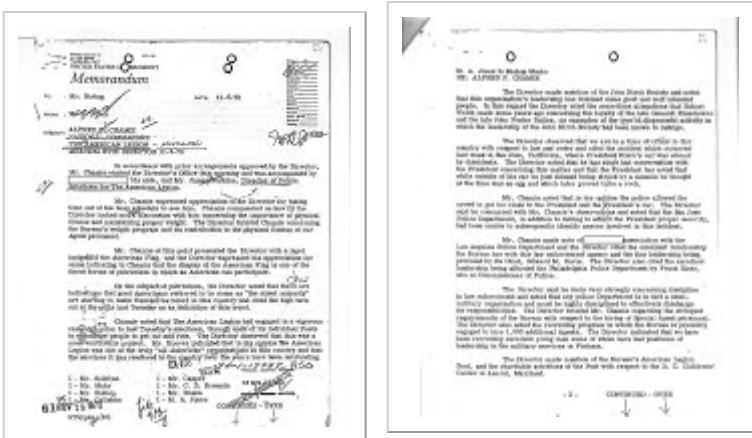
"Whatever its shortcomings, the John Birch Society does have as members a dedicated group of patriots...Instead of running down anti-communists, I suggest you fight those who are destroying American. Expose the oath violators in Washington who persist in changing America from a Republic of free men into a socialist-communist welfare state. Fight the despoilers of America, not the defenders, if you really believe in the free enterprise system and in individual liberty."



1968 - 1970

11/05/70 = J. Edgar Hoover met with the new American Legion National Commander, Alfred P. Chamie. An internal memo which summarized what was discussed by Hoover and Chamie states that:

"The Director made mention of the John Birch Society and noted that this organization's leadership has mislead (sic) some good and well intended people. In this regard the Director cited the scurrilous allegations that Robert Welch made some years ago concerning the loyalty of the late General Eisenhower and the late John Foster Dulles, as examples of the type of disgraceful activity in which the leadership of the John Birch Society has been known to indulge."



1971 - current

After the death of JBS founder Robert Welch in January 1985, an internal power struggle commenced which ultimately caused Mr. Welch's wife (Marian Welch) to end her relationship with the Birch Society because of her differences with the new management. In particular, she objected to the way in which new JBS leadership was trashing President Ronald Reagan in the pages of the JBS magazine, *The New American*.

7/23/85 =Marian Welch sends a message to all members of the JBS National Council announcing her resignation as editor of JBS publications. Then, in December 1985, Mrs. Welch circulates another message as part of a package of critical letters which were disseminated by JBS lifetime member, Dr. Charles Provan







12/4/85 = Gary Allen letter to Dr. Charles Provan which posits a conspiracy within the JBS to elevate incompetent officials who would work to stifle creativity and assure failure. Gary describes the new JBS National Director of Field Activities (Charles Everett) as "*a dedicated fanatic*" whom "*In another day and in another place...would have been a Communist or a Nazi.*"





Thanks to following the Panama strategy, mixed with a few bottles of Ovaltine, Sporkin, you'll recall, was the fear's master who tried to convince me that then everything was wonderful in Puerto before the revolution. Sporkin treated them which was making more than 100,000 dollars a week, gave the local parents new clothes and said that to these

Good as this, that we need to tell you these facts, it would be a tragedy if we could not have the Society open on this date. What can be done? Members must immediately begin writing and telephoning business, urging that Barker Karpis be released. The Society must also be able to elect a national leader of public opinion and administration. I am told that Governor Baldwin himself will be a speaker at the mass meeting. Although I have not consulted with him, I believe that the crowd will be large and the publicity rather hot as with a Clifford Harvey has been.

Richard Allen

$P_{\text{eff}} = 1.0 \times 10^{-4} \text{ sec}^{-1}$

12/30/85 = Gary North also joins the chorus of JBS members who pronounced the JBS "dead" as a result of their differences regarding how the JBS should be run.



4

Ministry of Science

Gray North

a/[10-Aug-17 10:52:52 AM]





2000 and afterward

MAJOR CONTROVERSIES WITHIN THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY

In the spring of 2005, a major controversy erupted within the senior echelons of the Birch Society over the methods used to install new leadership within the Society.

One long-time JBS member, Don Fotheringham, created a website for internal dissidents to share their thoughts over what they interpreted as a "coup" which occurred within the JBS that violated the mechanisms originally created by JBS founder Robert Welch for selecting new leadership for the Society.

I copy Mr. Fotheringham's explanatory letter about the reasons for his website below.

NOTE: Some of the internal URL links within the messages appearing below may not be operative because the Fotheringham website is no longer operating. However, readers may use the Internet Archive website's "Wayback Machine" search feature to see saved copies of the original webpages. [WAYBACK MACHINE](#)

<https://web.archive.org/web/20140102015412/http://donfoth.com/>

What's this site all about?

This website was first established to communicate my concern over the undermining of The John Birch Society, which began covertly in about April 2005, and culminated in a successful coup on October 21, 2005.

In a previous posting, I had stated that I was going to take this site down, because the outcome of the events described had long since been decided. However, so many requested that I continue to make this site available that I have decided to do so.

Several years ago I set up the "donfoth.com" website for the purpose of urging council members of the John Birch Society to: 1) Restore the monolithic structure and 2) Reinstate the Executive Committee as it was prior to the takeover. The Robert Welch method of appointment was more than a mere formality, it was the glue that held us intact and kept us on track for nearly half a century.

Few members of the council saw fit to answer my pleadings, nor did they seem to realize the fatal consequences of dumping the unique system created by Mr. Welch.



This surprised me because I think they are good men dedicated to saving the country; therefore I can only presume they never really understood the organizational structure or the wisdom behind it. Moreover, I grant the council another excuse: They must have had no first-hand knowledge of the poor work record of those who carried out the takeover.

The council apparently assumed the rebels were trying to save their country, never realizing they were merely saving their jobs. The least productive men, those who organized the coup, now run the Society – the ultimate irony.

In their effort to save their hides, the new team fired half of the field staff and hired two public relations experts. This left many chapters at a standstill while creating the illusion of a better public image. Consequently the vigor of the JBS has been reduced to appearances at the expense of fighting the enemy. Yes, *The New American* looks great, but have you seen the word Conspiracy in its pages lately?

Can a chapterless JBS recruit men and women for the struggle ahead? Not likely. Chapters are the main resource that recruits new “pullers at the oars,” and the *only* organized opposition that threatens the highly organized Conspiracy. Mr. Welch taught us that when the action is limited to a headquarters staff – even with thousands of such organizations – very little is accomplished. For this reason he founded the JBS where concerted chapter action brings results.

After these past few years of smiles, hearts, and flowers, veteran JBS members must be wondering who on earth remains to name and engage the world’s most deadly enemy. In my opinion, the dynamics for such a task are not likely to come from those who took over the Society. That’s because the focus on recruitment is lax, chapter building is nil, and the damage done to the succession structure will prevent new leaders with backbone from rising to the top.

Look at the JBS today. Where is the recruitment of young new members, with the potential to become volunteer leaders, staff and even council members? Look at the head table at a Council Dinner. Most of the “new” council appointees – Lloyd Bailey, Bunker Hunt, Paul Leithart, Dom Odorizzi, and Hid Welch – are at least as old as I am (81)! We sort of grew up together, but at least I am grown up enough to know a trench coat from a tuxedo.

Robert Welch often said, “We mean business every step of the way.” Don’t you think he would be appalled by what is now happening? While the freedom battle rages, members of the organization he founded seem to be content with belonging to a nostalgia society (the 50th anniversary, notwithstanding).

If exposing the Conspiracy is not our first objective, the country will never be saved. Those who lead the JBS seem to place a priority on garnering personal influence among prominent “respectable” conservatives. Those with that mindset will never have the backbone to name the enemy, take the gaff, or lead us to victory.

This whole ordeal has been hard for me. I value highly the friends and members with whom I have worked for many years. It’s with no small degree of hurt that some of my best friends have turned against me. It has been a high price for me to pay – a painful choice between principle and personality.

But despite an amazing barrage of bitterness coming from the least expected quarters, I honestly hold no ill will – disappointment? yes – but no bad feelings for those who have unfairly judged me or spoken evil of me. I knew what steps had to be taken, I took those steps, and I am at peace with my Maker.

And I am not yet finished with the fight for freedom. As an old man I am blessed with a little experience in the business of defending our Constitution, and the Lord has kept me alive, I think, to work for my country many more years than I had anticipated.

Please understand that I did not leave the John Birch Society – the Society left me. The organization died the day it lied. The field staff lost its way when it undermined the one man whose only sin was to require more of them. I feel certain that many members of the council now realize they have been had, for the incompetents in whom they put their trust can no longer blame their failures on their leaders – they *are* the leaders!

Fortunately, the former executives of the JBS are alive and resolute. Vance Smith, Tom Gow, Wayne Rickert, Walt Ruckel, and Keith Van Buskirk are the most principled, hard-working patriots the Society has seen since Robert Welch. They stand firmly behind the lessons of liberty espoused by that 20th century genius. And on that proven platform they have dug in their heels and launched the Freedom First Society (FFS), a no-nonsense dagger in the heart of the Conspiracy.

We are organized to restore, under a new name, the structure and focus that gave force to the former JBS. It is a singular honor for me to stand with the former CEO, Vice President,

and key members of the former Executive Committee in this reconstructed, monolithic, strictly Robert Welch-style organization.

I urge you to visit our new website, [www.freedomfirstsociety.org](http://www.freedomfirstsociety.org), then obtain a copy of our powerful new book [\*Organize for Victory!\*](#), in which its authors Vance Smith and Tom Gow have brilliantly summarized the cause and cure of our nation's ills.

If you are looking for experienced leaders, clear objectives, and hope for America – and if you are serious about getting down to business – please accept this invitation to come on line and get on board.

May the Lord bless each of you and help us save this (still) wonderful United States.

Don Fotheringham

---

Another controversy erupted within the JBS over comments which were being made by JBS President, John McManus, before Catholic organizations. Several senior leaders of the JBS thought McManus was expressing anti-semitic sentiments in his speeches. The only Jewish member of the Council at that time, David Eisenberg, sent McManus a letter asking him to clarify his remarks. McManus's initial reply was not satisfactory to Eisenberg.

The following March 22, 2006 letter from G. Vance Smith (former CEO of the JBS) to all members of the JBS National Council explains how senior leaders within the Birch Society interpreted the problem:

[03-22-06 letter to JBS National Council by G. Vance Smith](#)

<https://web.archive.org/web/20160215132106/http://donfoth.com/gvs3-21-06.html>

**G. Vance Smith  
2 Systems Drive  
Appleton, WI 54914  
Ph. 920-733-5000**

March 22, 2006

To Members of The Council of The John Birch Society (Copies to: JBS Building Contributors, JBS Field Staff)

Dear Gentlemen,

Because of the recent exchange of letters between Art Thompson and Wayne Rickert, I am sending this letter to those who have received that correspondence.

Please, take the time to read this letter and to study the enclosures (available upon request). Try, with me, to understand Art's motives in first attacking Jack and then later undermining me and eventually the Executive Committee. It should be very helpful to all genuinely interested in understanding what has been going on, and why.

There is so very much at stake. I will present to you material that in the past only the Executive Committee, the JBS Board of Directors, and a few in leadership of the Society ever needed to know. It was my hope that there would never be a need for this material to be distributed, but, if the Society is to be saved, the time has come.

Art's Sudden About-face

On March 8, 2006, I received a phone call from Rusty Barlow, a longtime member of The John Birch Society in Idaho. Rusty said he had just returned from a meeting with Art Thompson and Tom Rice. During the visit, Rusty asked Art plainly:

***"Art, do you feel comfortable with the statements Jack McManus has made about the Jews?"***

Art Thompson replied:

***"I don't have any problems at all with what Jack said. Vance Smith has taken Jack's words out of context to make Jack appear to be anti-Semitic. He has taken video presentations by Jack and linked small clips, again out of context, and threatened to use the video against Jack and the Society."***

This reflects an interesting change in Art's thinking about Jack. During the past six years, Art has continually expressed serious concern over what Art has referred to as Jack's "*anti-Semitic dialog*." In fact, it was Art Thompson who first brought the matter to my attention.

In the late spring of 2000, Art Thompson approached me with information he had received concerning Jack's speaking activities to non-Birch religious groups. Because Jack had already sent copies of his speeches, tapes, and videos to selected JBS members (Joe Maurer having been one of them), Art was certain that Jack's material was now being broadcast far and wide. Art expressed great concern that, if not checked, Jack would surely destroy the Society. Art then arranged for me to receive a number of videos, brochures, and related material that would prove his case.

Later, on October 22, 2000, Art sent me a faxed memo from his home in Washington wherein he outlined various strategies that could be used to deal with Jack. In that memo, discussed in more detail below, Art even proposed that we get Jack to retire because of Jack's expressed views on Jews and Masons.

Despite his grave concerns about Jack's activities, Art would later hypocritically change his position on Jack. Why? The reason seems obvious: Jack, as a key member of the Board of Incorporators, was essential to Art's aspirations to be CEO. In an effort to appeal to Jack's over-sized ego, Art must have let Jack know that he would once again enjoy the title of President if he used his position as an Incorporator to have Vance removed.

#### Jack's Version:

Jack McManus, now on the spot, has responded to questions from members about his speeches to religious gatherings with a story similar to Art's latest denials. In a January letter to a member, rather than providing the member with the requested copy of Jack's speech, Jack attempted to dismiss the whole episode in part with these words, *"In the talk, I made passing reference to many viewpoints that had always been held by the Catholic Church, one of which is that adherence to Judaism is deadly as far as eternal salvation is concerned. This, of course, is a view shared by Christians of numerous other denominations. But it is not a position ever taken by The John Birch Society which is not a religious organization."*

In other words, Jack is now suggesting that he has done nothing wrong at all. At a religious conference, he merely repeated a commonly held religious viewpoint, not necessarily even advocating it as his own. So we might ask, what rational Birchers could object — if that's all they were told?

#### Time for the Truth:

There's an old saying, *"If you don't quit lying about me, I'm going to start telling the truth about you."* In the face of convincing, but misleading denials from Jack and Art, it is time to tell the whole, incontrovertible truth. For I believe, as I wrote you earlier, that this issue demands your immediate attention. What I am going to describe is documented in several letters, documents, audio and videotapes, but I will enclose with this letter only a few items. All of them, however, are available to you upon request.

Before we go there, however, let's try to understand just what it was that John F. McManus had been accused of, what the former JBS leadership team had done to deal with their concerns about the matter, and whether the situation constituted a serious concern relative to the future of the Society.

#### David Eisenberg Speaks:

Jack is also circulating a letter written by David Eisenberg to Walt Ruckel. In it, David shows his forgiving nature by stating:

***"Some incorrect accusations have been made concerning the apparent anti-Semitism of John McManus. Please be assured that, as a Jew, I have a long time ago satisfied myself that statements made by John have been mis-interpreted by some folks who wish to lay the claim of anti-Semitism on John's head. I have had considerable correspondence with John on this subject, and find the claims to be without merit. In fact, John did revise that one speech to my satisfaction, and we have remained very good friends mutually dedicated to The John Birch Society and the task before us."***

Two main points in David's letter:

1. Yes, David was correct when he stated there are *"some folks who wish to lay the claim of anti-Semitism on John's head."* And, in fact, David Eisenberg was the first to do so when he stated in his postscript to his July 19, 2000 letter to Jack: *"How can we say that JBS is not anti-Semitic when the president speaks thus?"*
2. David also remarked, *"In fact, John did revise that one speech to my satisfaction... ."*



Well, even for friendship's sake, getting Jack to revise "*that one speech*" does not alter the fact that Jack wrote, spoke, and videotaped those statements that have been distributed by Jack and his friends at these conferences. Moreover, getting caught and being forced to change one's words in one speech, does not mean Jack's beliefs or proclivities have changed in the least.

On July 27, 2000, David wrote to me, and, as you can see, his opinions were very different. Below are some of his thoughts:

"Mr. McManus says in his letter of July 25th, '*...I hope that no harm comes to the Society because of my ill-considered outburst.*' I suspect that the speech was put down on paper and used by the speaker at the March 24th engagement. If this is true, then, the '*ill-considered outburst*' was a planned event. This bothers me, since the implication is that those words represent true feelings with respect to Jews and the Catholic Church as viewed by Mr. McManus.

"Hoping that no damage has been done to the Society doesn't solve the problem which has been created. While I don't know for sure, I do suspect that damage has been done, and the results not yet realized. We are responsible for our acts (unless our name is Clinton). Mr. McManus is responsible for any damage coming as a result of this unfortunate speech....

"But, this '*outburst*' projected from his being, to a gathering of his co-religionists, causes me to feel that irrational anti-Jewish thoughts are a part of the man when he addresses attacks against the Catholic Church. None of which is a part of The John Birch Society.

"What makes this most difficult to accept, is the fact that he is the President of The John Birch Society, and no matter where he may speak, he is recognized as a spokesman for the Society. In this position, he has no personal statements to make, even if he would first set up some disclaimer.

"The letter of July 25th contains no assurance that this '*ill-considered outburst*' won't happen again."

In another letter to Jack dated August 18, 2000, David continues to try and settle his feelings toward Jack. I quote:

"You refer to the '*ill-considered outburst.*' Jack, you composed your speech with those words of associating Jews with Masons. I don't feel that this was an '*outburst,*' but rather a prepared part of your speech. Was it '*ill-considered*' because of your position with The John Birch Society, or was it '*ill-considered*' with respect to Jews? My feeling is that you claim '*ill-considered*' reflecting your position with the Society. This leaves me to think that your, sometimes irrational, defense of the Catholic Church, is no different from the manner in which the Anti-defamation League (ADL) '*defends*' Judaism; in a manner less than true....

"However, I cannot understand the '*outburst*' unless there is some very real anti-semitism within your character. ...

"If harm comes to the Society as a result of your '*ill-considered*' comments, I shall be very unhappy. I have had to explain to all too many of my co-religionists for too many years, that JBS is not a danger to us, but rather a defense against our assured destruction. You, in this speech, have harmed my credibility. If there has been mass distribution of this speech, I would be afraid of the results."

Unfortunately, there was more than this one speech – there were several. Even Art Thompson points out in his memo (which I will describe in more detail later) that Jack McManus had been giving talks such as these for at least a decade. The most damage done by Jack was in his speeches, "*Know Thine Enemy,*" delivered at the Saint Joseph Forum, and "*Conspiracy Against the Catholic Church,*" delivered at the Saint Benedict Center. And there may have been other venues unknown to us where Jack presented his speeches and combined his *ostensible* Church views with his Birch views.

Regardless of whether Jack is truly anti-Semitic in his heart, he has an uncontrollable, irresponsible ego and has often had to be restrained from speaking before groups with whom The John Birch Society would not want to be associated. The danger to the Society is the same in any event.

When Tom Gow, Jack, and I were given our positions to preside over the Society in June 1991, The Executive Committee counseled Jack about his ego and cautioned him to carefully weigh his words. Some of Jack's words in the past, thoughtlessly expressed, had offended La Rita Quinn (organizer of the very successful Colorado Rocky Mountain Rally) and others and had caused the Society embarrassment. Even though Tom Hill had cautioned us to never make Jack president, the Executive Committee decided to take the risk. While Clyde Lewis, Joe Grinnan, Phil Binzel, Wayne Rickert and Walt Ruckel wanted to give Jack the leadership opportunity, they were also aware of his tendency to "speak out of school." Unfortunately, Jack let them down.

**Jack Wouldn't Stop**

Moving on, dozens — if not hundreds — of hours went into trying to work through all this with Jack. Tom Gow invested more time than any of us in corresponding and sending lengthy memos to Jack in an effort to reason with him. And finally, because we were still disappointed in Jack's unwillingness to take responsibility for his actions, we put in file a lengthy letter to Jack reprimanding him in the matter. That letter of July 31, 2000 was signed by Tom Gow and me, and it was accompanied by a letter signed by JBS board members, Gary Benoit and Jim Toft, attesting to their concerns.

We were in hopes that this was all finally settled and behind us. But the matter didn't stay resolved very long. Much to our consternation, in the spring of 2002, Jack once again allowed himself to be put on the agenda as a speaker at the St. Benedict Center where several of his previous speeches had been videotaped.

When this was brought to my attention — and I believe once more by Art Thompson — I met with Jack and confronted him. He apologized for breaking the trust, but assured me that he had reviewed the program and was certain this time that no speeches would be given on the topic of the “*Jewish*” conspiracy. Nevertheless, as Jack had already recognized the need to distance himself from this group knowing full well the “guilt-by-association” consequences, I asked him to cancel his appearance. He said that would cause him to lose face and would be too difficult for him to do, so we decided on a business trip out of the country (to Canada) to provide him with a respectable excuse.

Nevertheless, that was the last straw. I sent off a letter dated July 3, 2002 to Jack. The Executive Committee, which included two traditional Catholics, Joe Grinnan and Dr. Phil Binzel — one of Jack's staunchest defenders — along with Executive Committee members Rickert, Ruckel, and Van Buskirk, and JBS officers, agreed that Jack could not be reined in and that action must be taken. It was decided that we had no choice other than to quietly move Jack to the backburner and to eventually remove his title as president of the Society. That, of course, finally happened in October of 2003.

Now, there are those who are saying, “*So, Jack made a little mistake. He fixed all that a long time ago.*” Well, Jack has not fixed anything and he has not changed in the least. Again in 2005, Jack spoke to these groups — the same groups that in the past had featured, besides others of the same ilk, anti-Jewish author/lecturer Paul Fisher. And again, after all the trouble he had caused in the past, Jack did not seek permission from anyone to do so. Jack would soon learn of the secret coup taking place and undoubtedly realized that, for his part in it, he would likely be president again and no longer held to account. For this time — with the all-powerful title of “Chairman of the Board of Incorporators” — he would report to no one.

**Art Thompson Exposes Jack McManus’ “Anti-Semitic dialog”:**

You have already received from Wayne Rickert the memo Art Thompson wrote to me (dated October 22, 2000) outlining the possible ramifications of Jack's actions. In it Art lays out possible scenarios of repercussions from Jack's speeches. And he comments about what might happen if any of the following: Alan Stang, Joseph Maurer, Richmond Weathers, Don Julius, Marty Ohlson (Art's new re-hire), all dissidents from the past, were to link up with Morris Dees and join in on the attack.

Under “Possibilities,” Art Thompson lists:

“McManus launches the attack.

- 1. Joins Maurer
- 2. Stays “independent but goes to **incorporators**”

(Wow! Art obviously knew of Jack's incorporators “trump card” — a card that would later cause great harm to the Society. As you now know, it was played by three of the five incorporators fully aware of Jack's anti-Jewish remarks.)

Under the heading of “*What do we do?*” Art suggests:

Regardless of the direction, most of the below should be done ASAP.

- A. **Put on a video short clips of the various speeches by McManus.**
  - 1. Show how he is introduced. If by “Berchman” then the fact that he refers in the body of the speech that he refers to himself as *representing* The JBS. (Does this talk represent the opinion of The JBS?)
- B. Transcribe same plus any written material pertinent.
- C. Document the attempt to get McManus to do the right thing. (By you & T. Gow.)



1. In the process, point out the subterfuge of St. Joseph's being the first incident. It wasn't. **It has been going on for at least 3 ½ years, at least with the anti-Semitic dialog.**
2. Point out McManus has for well over 10 years been out speaking for and to Catholic organizations as the President of The JBS with most of this info on our nickel. (It has not been uncommon that he arranges these talks while in the area while on JBS business let alone the special trips taken to do the above – to private individuals at first.)

D. **Try to get McManus to resign** as a retirement move. He is already collecting social security.

There is no question what Art felt about Jack's "*anti-Semitic dialog*." And, of course, this "*looking out for the Society*" ingratiated him with us and helped him secure an office in the Appleton headquarters. Art would later, and only Heaven knows his motivation, orchestrate a leftist-styled smear campaign against me and eventually even against the Executive Committee.

**Art Thompson pulls others into a smear campaign and coup:**

The procedure was textbook. Art took leaders and managers aside to sow seeds of discontent. The Bush years, like the Reagan years in the 1980s, were proving very difficult for the Society. Because membership, chapter, and financial results were down considerably, there was a great deal of stress in the organization. Staff leaders in the field and in the office were expected to implement solid management principles to ensure the best results possible. And, needless to say, as the CEO, I was feeling much of that stress and was applying much of the pressure – not always a real nice guy. Then, Art taking other managers aside (office and field), was able to pull negative comments from them. He convinced several that essential management systems were really "micro-management" on the part of Vance. Then, when he was successful in getting some to commiserate with him, he would pass those comments along to others, especially his long-time friend Cliff Wasem.

Cliff, who two years earlier had unsuccessfully campaigned for "*Art for President*," then apparently spent dozens of hours over several months lining up the opposition to Vance Smith with Council members and with what he referred to as "senior staff." As recently as two weeks before this letter was written, Cliff was still bragging about his efforts to "*pull this off*" by lining up the opposition to Vance and the Executive Committee.

Early on, Executive Committee member Art Crino was pulled into the fray. Then Art Crino, behind the backs of his fellow Executive Committee members, retailed his allegations to all who would listen. He **admitted to field staff** member Bryan Turner that he had been engaged secretly in this effort since April 2005. Then, realizing that he had misspoken, he told Bryan Turner he would deny the statement he had made earlier. In other words, five months before any of this came to the attention of his fellow Executive Committee members or myself, Art Crino was working to remove us. His reward, as you well know, was to be elected by Jack and his band of incorporators as "*Chairman of the Board of Directors*."

(We have been told that the removal of Art Crino from the Executive Committee is what convinced JBS Incorporator John Fall to allow Jack to hold his nefarious incorporators meeting on October 21st. I find myself scratching my head over this issue. Would any of you, if you were an Executive Committee member, like Wayne, Walt, or Keith, be okay about a colleague on your committee working to subvert the decisions of, and undermine confidence in, the authority of that committee? I would hope not. Would you want him removed from your committee? I would hope so.)

As with any Leftist smear campaign to topple a government, the spotlight was all on the alleged abuses and inadequacies of G. Vance Smith. I suspect there was little investigation or discussion of the inadequacies of the proposed alternatives. Mr. Welch would have been appalled, I believe, at this approach to choosing the Society's leader.

Let's look a little closer at the rewards to those who led the campaign. As mentioned, Art Crino was made "*Chairman of the Board*," and Cliff Wasem was elevated to a now-emasculated Executive Committee. And two of Art Thompson's struggling fundraisers, both in their 70s, were promoted. One, for his part in the coup, was appointed a full vice president of fundraising, while the other, who had been reassigned because he failed earlier in the job, was again appointed as Director of Field Activities. Obviously, leadership in both the field and fundraising departments is essential to the Society's success.

So, the question is, what are you as members of the Council going to do about these problems?

Only you can use your influence with other Council members to force Jack to resign from all leadership positions — especially as a member of the JBS Board of Incorporators. He has certainly proven himself unworthy to hold that position. Only you can put pressure on Art Thompson to resign.

Only you can insist that Art Crino and Cliff Wasem be removed from the Council and any elected

positions they presently hold.

And, only you can insist on what Don Fotheringham is advocating — that the Executive Committee be exonerated and reinstituted exactly the way it was in mid-October 2005. Then, allow the Executive Committee, in conference with the Council members who were serving in that period of time, to hear any legitimate complaints and deal with those matters that, over the years, they've proven themselves so capable of handling.

Council members, first of all, must be good Birchers, and you are the Council members. You hold a high and important trust with the general membership. You are not "window dressing" as some have stated, you were appointed to be "pullers at the oars and not passengers in the boat." Stand up, speak out, and do something.

It is now up to you. Even though the former leadership had kept them under wraps, the recent events have brought the views of Jack McManus relative to the Jewish religion and Masonry out in to the open. If the Society is going to move forward without this "anti" baggage, Jack simply must be removed from all JBS leadership positions. Doing so will once again demonstrate to the world that The John Birch Society is focused on principles and is free from any justified accusations of bigotry.

Not only the Society, our entire nation is in deep trouble. There is a very real enemy, a ruthless Conspiracy that wishes to enslave all mankind that needs to be dealt with. Plus, the extremely important campaign to stop the FTAA is being neglected, and the equally important activity to stop the North American Community has gone nowhere since October when Tom Gow and I were forced to leave. The Insiders are moving forward and they must be thrilled with what is happening — and what is not happening — in The John Birch Society.

It's time to check this deplorable situation and go to work! Please feel free to contact me if you would like to discuss the matter further.

Sincerely,  
G. Vance Smith

To obtain the following support documentation please email your request to [Kathy Braun](#).

*Smith letter to McManus, 7/03/02*  
*(2) Conference flyers, 2005*  
*Benoit and Toft letter, 8/03/00*  
*Eisenberg letter, 7/19/00*  
*Eisenberg letter, 7/27/00*  
*Eisenberg letter, 8/18/00*

---

Mr. McManus's anti-semitic sentiments were well-known within the John Birch Society. William Norman Grigg, the former senior editor of the JBS magazine, *The New American*, posted the following comments on his blog:

Monday, November 12, 2012

**[Can They Handle the Truth? \(Update, November 13\)](#)**

<http://jbsrip.blogspot.com/search?updated-min=2012-01-01T00:00:00-08:00&updated-max=2013-01-01T00:00:00-08:00&max-results=9>

For decades – probably since the early 1970s – Jack McManus peddled anti-Semitic nonsense on company time. This was known to Art Thompson no later than 1999 or 2000. This is a violation of JBS institutional policy laid down, in unambiguous terms, by Mr. Welch in the mid-1960s.

By the late 1990s, [McManus had become a huge liability to the organization](#). At Vance Smith's request, Art Thompson compiled a dossier on McManus's activities and used this as leverage to remove McManus as JBS President in 2000.

Five years later, Thompson -- whose calculus of self-interest had changed -- allied with McManus to remove Vance Smith. Seeking to save his job, Smith used the same dossier in an effort to blackmail McManus. I was one of several people who were shown video clips of anti-Semitic speeches by McManus and told that the material could end up in the hands of the media (e.g. Larry King) and Morris Dees, head of the Southern Poverty Law Center (SPLC). This caused me to resign from the JBS in disgust – only to be begged back on staff, two days later, by McManus, who wanted me to sit alongside him and Thompson at the first staff meeting following Smith's ouster.

It wasn't until Vance Smith's allies made some elements of Thompson's dossier public that I understood the depth and extent of the Jack McManus scandal – and the cynicism displayed by both Thompson and Smith in dealing with it. This is precisely the kind of thing that thrives in an atmosphere of institutionalized truth-shading. And it is

exactly what Robert Welch didn't intend for the organization he created.

All of this has been [sitting in plain view for years](#), and – predictably – it has finally caught the attention of the SPLC, just as Thompson predicted in 2000 and Smith threatened in 2005.

In an earlier blog posting, Mr. Grigg provided additional details re: McManus's religious beliefs:

<http://jbsrip.blogspot.com/search?updated-min=2010-01-01T00:00:00-08:00&updated-max=2011-01-01T00:00:00-08:00&max-results=10>

Tuesday, June 15, 2010

**The McManus Credo: Dulce et Decorum est Mendacium Decir**

*He never stops lying, and until the breath permanently departs his lungs he never will.*

It wasn't until [Don Fotheringham used his website to publicize the Art Thompson-created dossier on Jack](#) that I learned that he had spent years propagating anti-Semitic nonsense, while pulling down a pretty decent salary to be the figurehead president of the JBS. He did so in prolonged, conscious defiance of the Birch Society's principles. This is why he was -- at Art Thompson's initiative -- removed from his position as JBS president. As the effort to blackmail him in 2005 demonstrates, Jack's actions directly threatened the very existence of the organization.

So, naturally, [Jack was reinstated by Art Thompson as JBS president](#), and a year after I had risked my job on their behalf, Jack and Art stabbed me in the back.

Jack's self-serving definition of "anti-Semitism" as "one who hates" is worthy of remark. I can't address Jack's inner life, or his unspoken motives, so I grant that it's entirely possible that he doesn't hate Jews. That isn't the issue, nor is Jack's definition of "anti-Semitism" the proper one for our purposes.

[Jack is committed, as a matter of covenant, to a minuscule and deeply authoritarian schismatic para-Catholic cult founded by unabashed anti-Semite Leonard Feeney.](#) In 1959, Feeney -- a defrocked priest still referred to as "Father" by his followers -- insisted that **"the Jews, as an organized force, are the implacable, declared enemies of Christianity"** — of its tenets, its traditions, its moral code, its very culture. We think it is vital, too, for American Catholics to realize that **the Church has always known this fact about the Jews, and, to the extent of her influence, has counseled and decreed regulations for curbing their malice.**" (Emphasis added.)

Feeney and his followers insist that *"the state must declare itself officially Catholic"* -- that is, "Catholic" as defined by Feeney, since everybody else in the Roman Catholic Church is controlled by the Judeo-Masonic conspiracy. Under a Feeneyite regime, the "curbs" inflicted on Jews by the state would include the denial of citizenship. Historically this has led to some pretty ugly consequences, up to and including the Shoah.

Presumably, Jack would see this as a form of rigorous "Christian" love -- the same kind of tough but necessary correction that Torquemada and other torturers applied in order to purify Jews and other heretics through pain. The day after I was fired, while I was still bleeding from the dorsal knife wounds he helped to inflict, Jack sent me an e-mail professing to be my friend. So there's reason to believe that his views of affection would be suited to the practice of "Christian" kindness of the sort described above.

Despite the fact that the Feeneyite ideology is utterly incompatible with constitutionalism, let alone the professed principles of the JBS, Jack has been peddling this stuff while taking home a Birch paycheck -- and he's been doing so for decades.

Several weeks ago, I received a letter from a veteran in the liberty movement who describes his first meeting with McManus:

[I first met Jack in 1973. I was a high school senior in Boston. My history teacher, \[name omitted\] ... had given me "The Law" by Bastiat and I discovered I was a libertarian. \[The teacher\] told me about the JBS bookstore in Belmont and I rode my bicycle over to check it out.](#)

[That's when I met Jack. I was at the bookstore perhaps once a month or so buying books. When you entered the front door, the book store was to the right, and Jack's office was to the left. If Jack was there he'd always invite me into his office for a chat. Jack would give me his spiel on the Masonic Pope, the Masonic UN, and the Masonic Masons. In the summer of 1974, I told Jack I was planning to go to \[an Evangelical Christian college\] that fall. Jack was horrified! "They hate the Catholic Church!" he said. I was still indifferent to religion. I decided on \[that school\] because I didn't want to go to a leftist college like Boston University or any of the other schools in Massachusetts.](#)

[I'd found out about \[the school Jack hated\] through their ads on the back cover of American Opinion magazine, and I made the mistake of assuming that since the JBS bookstore sold lots of libertarian books, \(Murray Rothbard, Ludwig von Mises, Bastiat, etc\) that anything and anyone connected to the JBS also had to be good. Duh!](#)

[Anyway, I only lasted one semester ... and soon after I returned in December, Jack told me about St. Benedict](#)

Center, which at that time was in Harvard, MA. He also loaned me a number of books about catholic history, extolling the virtues of the Inquisition, Queen Isabella, Philip II and the like... It didn't occur to me at the time, but looking back, and reading what you say about Jack on your blog, it is interesting that **at no time did Jack seem interested in what I might do in relation to the JBS, but he was extremely interested in getting me involved with SBC.** [the Feeneyite cult's religious community]. And all of this while sitting in his office in the Birch Society headquarters, collecting his salary from the JBS.

So his religious crusading goes back at least to mid-1974.

Jack is obviously deeply committed to the Feeneyite religion. On the basis of his example it's apparent that honesty is not among its tenets.

*Nemo me impune lacessit!*

## **TEXT OF MCMANUS SPEECH**

The text of Mr. McManus's "*Know Thine Enemy*" speech on March 24, 2000 before the St. Joseph Forum in South Bend, Indiana which was one his speeches causing controversy within the Birch Society may be seen here:

[McManus Speech, March 24, 2000 = Know Thine Enemy](#)

## **SELECTED NEWSPAPER ARTICLES RE: JBS (GOOGLE NEWS ARCHIVE)**

JBS POSITION ON SEGREGATION (11/14/63)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=8U4cAAAAIABJ&sjid=YVEEAAAAIABJ&pg=7301%2C877028>

GOLDWATER RECOMMENDS MEMBERS QUIT JBS (10/15/65)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=bCNbAAAAIABJ&sjid=U4NAAAAIABJ&pg=4364%2C4691280>

JBS MEMBERS AND ILLEGAL DRUGS (6/4/76)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=jpUbAAAAIABJ&sjid=gIEEAAAAIABJ&pg=5352%2C3202057>

CHARLES ARMOUR (12/9/66)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=SfFVAAAAIABJ&sjid=eADAAAAIABJ&pg=6539%2C2240170>

MCMANUS ON JBS MEMBERS=50,000 (1/24/85)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=XSZJAAAAIABJ&sjid=ZQYNAAAAIABJ&pg=1332%2C3546412>

REED BENSON on COMMUNISTS "IGNORING" JBS (5/11/63)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=6AghAAAAIABJ&sjid=jdUEAAAAIABJ&pg=863%2C1928541>

MCMANUS ON JBS MEMBERS 40-80k (5/7/83)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=uBoiAAAAIABJ&sjid=iKYFAAAAAIABJ&pg=5741%2C6287608>

JBS IN WASHINGTON STATE (2/8/92)

[http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=ybMyAAAAIABJ&sjid=Q\\_ADAAAAIABJ&pg=7240%2C4979083](http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=ybMyAAAAIABJ&sjid=Q_ADAAAAIABJ&pg=7240%2C4979083)

JBS in TX AMERICAN LEGION (4/10/61)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=3qVTAAAAIABJ&sjid=O4gDAAAAIABJ&pg=5155%2C936881>

WELCH INTERVIEW BY NEA (6/30/71) - he estimates percentage of control in various areas of society

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=Ik9NAAAAIABJ&sjid=qTUDAAAAIABJ&pg=680%2C7997182>

WELCH INTERVIEW BY MILWAUKEE NEWSPAPER (6/12/71)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=rvkpAAAAIABJ&sjid=MREEAAAAIABJ&pg=4910%2C2046916>

FIRST GENE BLAKE ARTICLE IN LAT (reprinted in different paper 4/23/61)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=2o8yAAAAIABJ&sjid=8wAGAAAAIABJ&pg=4287%2C6267469>

WHAT IS JBS? (JBS AD - Tuscaloosa AL News, 12/13/65)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=LRAdAAAAIABJ&sjid=FpsEAAAAIABJ&pg=6637%2C2565551>

JBS IN FLORIDA and BEN KLASSEN (Miami News, 5/2/67)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=P1o0AAAAIABJ&sjid=OOsFAAAAAIABJ&pg=638%2C229483>

UPI ARTICLE ON JBS (10/15/64)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=SEhPAAAAIABJ&sjid=W08DAAAAIABJ&pg=6686%2C174222>

WELCH IN OREGON (1/19/68)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=n6lVAAAAIABJ&sjid=OOEDAAAAIABJ&pg=4366%2C3344186>

FLOYD PAXTON OBIT (12/11/75)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=xjYwAAAAIABJ&sjid=zvgDAAAAIABJ&pg=6411%2C3907091>

NY YANKEES PITCHER - JBS MEMBER MIKE ARMSTRONG (8/4/84)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=SqxQAAAAIABJ&sjid=heEDAAAAIABJ&pg=2435%2C847779>



JBS SUMMER YOUTH CAMPS (8/12/82)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=ImoaAAAAIABJ&sjid=2SkEAAAAIABJ&pg=3355%2C812624>

SAMUEL BLUMENFELD ON UNITARIANS (12/13/85)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=ozExAAAAIABJ&sjid=ckUDAAAAIABJ&pg=2075%2C3237681>

JBS BOOKSTORE--LODI CA (11/26/79)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=L3szAAAAIABJ&sjid=tjIHAAAAIABJ&pg=6793%2C2666557>

JBS POLICE CONTROVERSY - SANTA ANA CA (11/11/64)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=j4ljAAAAIABJ&sjid=CnoNAAAAIABJ&pg=7025%2C923520>

KATHY MCDONALD, CANDIDATE FOR CONGRESS (11/4/83)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=V60jAAAAIABJ&sjid=bkUDAAAAIABJ&pg=3674%2C4663511>

EDWIN WALKER ARRESTED--LEWDNESS CHARGE (7/9/76)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=5yEMAAAAIABJ&sjid=V10DAAAAIABJ&pg=6390%2C85539>

ROBERT WELCH and CANDY INDUSTRY (6/3/61)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id= cgAAAAIABJ&sjid=D3QFAAAAAIABJ&pg=3227%2C515225>

ROBERT WELCH IN Lodi CA (4/23/81)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=bGkzAAAAIABJ&sjid=rDIHAAAAIABJ&pg=4406%2C6164412>

ROBERT WELCH OBIT--UPI and AP (1/8/85)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=ZaxAAAAAIABJ&sjid=zzIHAAAAIABJ&pg=5208%2C603985>

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=SpcRAAAAIABJ&sjid=jOkDAAAAIABJ&pg=7078%2C2107212>

UPI ARTICLE ON JBS (6/17/62)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=ZaxAAAAAIABJ&sjid=zzIHAAAAIABJ&pg=5208%2C603985>

ROBERT WELCH ON EISENHOWER AS COMMUNIST AGENT (4/1/61)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=mxkQAAAAIABJ&sjid=8IoDAAAAIABJ&pg=2507%2C24704>



RICHARD NIXON ON WELCH and JBS (3/2/62)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=RjtWAAAAIBAJ&sjid=QukDAAAAIBAJ&pg=4531%2C212037>

WELCH IN AUSTIN TX (11/21/61)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=LwRPAAAAIBAJ&sjid=QUsDAAAAIBAJ&pg=6826%2C5437704>

WELCH ON CIVIL RIGHTS MOVEMENT (3/9/65)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=LLBYAAAAIBAJ&sjid=nvcDAAAAIBAJ&pg=1591%2C2095927>

REVILO OLIVER ON JFK ASSASSINATION (4/3/64)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=oYVRAAAAIBAJ&sjid=vxAEAAAAIBAJ&pg=7300%2C372321>

SLOBODAN DRASKOVICH RESIGNS FROM JBS NATIONAL COUNCIL (8/18/66)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=HW4dAAAAIBAJ&sjid=G5sEAAAAIBAJ&pg=7325%2C3019443>

REVILO OLIVER ON WARREN COMMISSION (8/27/64)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=xKwyAAAAIBAJ&sjid=Q-oFAAAAAIBAJ&pg=782%2C3788810>

ROBERT WELCH ON "REAGAN AS LACKEY OF COMMUNISTS" STATEMENT BY MCMANUS (10/29/80)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=IaErAAAAIBAJ&sjid=ePwFAAAAAIBAJ&pg=5714%2C5773158>

AP ARTICLE ON JBS (5/11/83)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=YxUyAAAAIBAJ&sjid=RqUFAAAAIBAJ&pg=3600%2C468748>

JBS IN UTAH (6/19/89)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=hDspAAAAIBAJ&sjid=IoQDAAAAIBAJ&pg=6870%2C1805752>

JBS PLAN TO OPEN UNIVERSITY (7/12/76)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=ECEyAAAAIBAJ&sjid=suUFAAAAIBAJ&pg=6793%2C1661495>

JBS IN APPLETON WI (5/30/90)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=RJZQAAAAIBAJ&sjid=uxIEAAAAIBAJ&pg=5290%2C9634763>

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=WacaAAAAIBAJ&sjid=Li8EAAAAIBAJ&pg=2241%2C1586279>

JBS IN IDAHO (4/2/85)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=vFhWAAAAIBAJ&sjid=Ee8DAAAAIBAJ&pg=3558%2C505688>

AP ARTICLE ON JBS (5/19/76 and 5/27/76)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=px8qAAAAIBAJ&sjid=KSKEAAAAIBAJ&pg=6930%2C5147161>

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=PQMOAAAAIBAJ&sjid=gWODAAAAIBAJ&pg=5984%2C2673377>

JBS \$9 MILLION DEBT (8/25/86)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=ibgxAAAAIBAJ&sjid=yeUFAAAAIBAJ&pg=4559%2C7183808>

MELDRIM THOMPSON--JBS MEMBER (10/29/80)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=IaErAAAAIBAJ&sjid=ePwFAAAAAIBAJ&pg=5034%2C5773899>

JBS IN PENNSYLVANIA (9/14/88)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=S6kcAAAAIBAJ&sjid=Z2MEAAAAIBAJ&pg=6862%2C7677476>

JBS ON "NEW WORLD ORDER" (11/11/90)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=K3YhAAAAIBAJ&sjid=O4kFAAAAAIBAJ&pg=3490%2C2986877>

RONALD REAGAN ON JBS (10/17/66)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=IvYeAAAAIBAJ&sjid=FYwEAAAAIBAJ&pg=5419%2C2103542>

WECLH ON JBS MEMBERS SUPPORT FOR RONALD REAGAN AS CALIF GOV (12/6/66)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=W-YcAAAAIBAJ&sjid=CpcEAAAAIBAJ&pg=5350%2C3750381>

JBS ON REAGAN CAMPAIGN MANAGER WILLIAM J. CASEY (7/7/80)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=Bq4lAAAAIBAJ&sjid=UfMFAAAAIBAJ&pg=3071%2C2188163>

JBS CRITICISM OF PRESIDENT REAGAN (9/13/85)

<http://news.google.com/newspapers?id=tLwzAAAAIBAJ&sjid=au8DAAAAIBAJ&pg=4336%2C7508508>

**QUESTIONS and COMMENTS MAY BE SENT TO: [ernie1241@aol.com](mailto:ernie1241@aol.com)**

Due to Google sites space limitations, the *Documentary History of the John Birch Society* is on 5 webpages here:

**CHAPTER.....Time Period.....URL**

**JBS 9-1 / 01/58 thru 08/11/60 =** <https://sites.google.com/site/ernie1241/>

**JBS 9-2 / 09/60/60 thru 12/15/61 =** <https://sites.google.com/site/ernie1241a/>

**JBS 9-3 / 01/62 thru 12/31/64 =** <https://sites.google.com/site/ernie1241b/>

**JBS 9-4 / 01/65 thru 12/31/65 =** <https://sites.google.com/site/jbs9004/>

**JBS 9-5 / 01/66 thru current =** <https://sites.google.com/site/jbs9005a/>

[Sign in](#) | [Recent Site Activity](#) | [Report Abuse](#) | [Print Page](#) | Powered By [Google Sites](#)

|           |
|-----------|
| ▼ Home    |
| JBS       |
| CPUSA1    |
| HarryDean |
| MULLINS   |
| Sitemap   |

Home >  
**JBS - chapter 10**

This webpage pertains to some of the people whom the John Birch Society has employed as speakers under the auspices of its American Opinion Speakers Bureau and/or individuals which it has recommended as reliable and authoritative authors.

The documents below with photos are the summaries written by the JBS about some of its Speakers Bureau employees.

(1) GARY ALLEN



Gary Allen was one of the most prolific writers for the JBS magazine, *American Opinion* [AO]. By 1985, after Robert Welch died, Allen became very hostile toward the new leadership of the Birch Society and he wrote several very acerbic letters about his disgust with JBS leadership. One is copied below. Others may be seen on pages 13-26 of [https://archive.org/details/JBS\\_CRITICS\\_INSIDE\\_JBS-1](https://archive.org/details/JBS_CRITICS_INSIDE_JBS-1)

In a 8/19/95 letter addressed to "*Dear Fellow Bircher*" -- Allen discussed the firing of Scott Stanley Jr., (a former editor of *American Opinion*) and the treatment of Mrs. Robert Welch:

"This month would have marked my 20th anniversary as a writer for *American Opinion*. During this time I have written over 200 articles for the magazine. The total word count is over two million. I never intended to be a journalist. I became one because I was mad as Hell about what was going on in the world. That is why I first became a Bircher and then, by circumstances, a journalist.

My writings have been well-received by Birchers because they knew I was telling the truth and not mincing any words. Well, it's time to tell some more truths. Unfortunately, this is the most unpalatable truth I have ever had to tell. But the fact is that our vehicle to preserve and regain

our freedom and liberties has been stolen from us. And, it was an inside job. I am going to tell you things that you don't want to hear; things that will break your heart. But we can't hide from the truth. If we do, we are simply engaging in the same kind of fantasies as your typical slumbering citizen.

You know by now that AO has been ash-canned. Robert Welch must be spinning in his grave. He created AO as the ideological base and transmission belt for our movement. AO and *The Review of the News* are theoretically to be replaced by a hybrid whose name, *The New American*, is also used by the Social Democrats for their newspaper! An ideological journal and a news magazine don't mix very well, but that is not the point. The official line is that the magazines had low circulation and were losing money. This conveniently ignores the fact that Scott Stanley only produced the magazines. He was denied any voice in promotion although he certainly craved to see his creations get the promotion and circulation they deserved. He was promised repeatedly that marketing, subscription renewal policies and the like would be improved. These promises were never honored.

Before we go any further, let's get something straight. The official party line from Belmont will be that I wrote this letter because I am angry about Scott being fired. Guilty, but with an explanation. Yes, Scott Stanley is the closest friend I have on this earth. I couldn't love him more if we were genetic brothers.

The only people to whom I feel more loyalty are my family members. The survival of freedom and liberty for my children comes first. That is why this letter had to be written.

You have been told that Scott '*resigned*'. That is about 10% truth and 90% falsehood. Scott was, for all intents and purposes, fired. This is what really happened: Barker told Scott that he had to desist from making speeches to raise money for Kathy McDonald's court defense against the vicious ACLU; that doing so was '*competition*' with the Society. (Barker has said '*What has Kathy McDonald done for the Society lately?*'). Scott told him that his conscience would not allow him to throw Larry's widow and babies to the wolves. Barker replied that if this was Scott's attitude, he should resign. The Barker Gang obviously saw Scott with all his creativity as a threat to their reign. They wanted him out, gone. So they created circumstances under which no man of honor could stay on. That is the real story of how Scott '*resigned*'.

There was never a thank you for 25 years of sweat, blood, and total dedication. Not a single friend of Scott's (outside his staff and writers) even called to express their appreciation. Unbelievable! Barker then fired Lee Clark, Scott's brilliant associate editor of nearly 20 years.

Scott's loyal staff has left virtually en masse. Gone are associate editors Bill Hoar, Jim Graves and editorial assistant Julie Harding. Gone are key writers John Rees, Alan Stang, Sue Huck, Medford Evans, and Gary Allen.

The new editor of *The Review of the News* is Jack McManus. Jack is fairly glib orally, but he is no journalist. His assistant has done most of the writing for *The Birch Log*. There is a big difference between turning out a single-sheet commentary and putting out a weekly newsmagazine. ...

The only thing crueler than the way Scott was treated was the absolutely despicable way Mrs. Welch was treated. The Barker Gang's line on this one is that Mrs. Welch retired because of age. Another lie. She was rudely treated and was shoved out. Can you believe that? Call her and ask her about it ...

About the lowest, most vulgar stunt I've ever heard of was when John McManus slithered into Mrs. Welch's office just two days after Mr. Welch's death to gloat to her that her husband had converted to Feeneyite Catholicism on his deathbed, after having taken instructions in the faith. This is a damnable lie. During the last months of his life he didn't even recognize his wife most of the time. He couldn't take instructions in anything. You may think this stunt is beneath contempt, but I have a lot of contempt for it.

The Feeneyites believe the Pope, whom the KGB tried to assassinate, is a Communist and that all non-Feeneyites are going to Hell. Outside of Tom Hill and Barker, this cult virtually runs Belmont. If the general membership ever found out about Feeneyite control of the Belmont bureaucracy, there would be revolt in the ranks. ...

Incidentally, Mr. Welch paid for the upkeep and maintenance of his home with royalties from *The Blue Book* and *The Politician*. Barker has told Mrs. Welch that this policy has been cancelled. Robert Welch put every cent he had into the fight. There is no estate to speak of other than the house. Mrs. Welch, after everything else she has suffered, has been forced to put that house up for sale."

Who is A. Clifford Barker, anyway? Nobody knows this guy. Barker became the head of the Society not because he was chosen, but because he volunteered. The Belmont line is that he took over the Society at great personal sacrifice. Well, he did have to give up his welfare check. You see, he had filed bankruptcy. His board of directors threw him out after his company had gone broke doing government defense contracts. I thought that was impossible. It was after the bankruptcy that Sperry-Rand stepped in and took over the debacle. That is the true story behind Barker's great sacrifice, despite the baloney being peddled from Belmont...The truth is that Barker is a consummate liar. What are his motivations? I don't know. Some think he was sent in to deliberately destroy the Society. John Rees contends that if this were true, he would be more subtle about it. What can be done about Barker, 'The Destroyer'? I don't know. I don't know if anything can be done. That is up to YOU. I only know that, as Burke observed, all that is necessary for evil to triumph is for good men to do nothing. Sincerely, Gary Allen."

An example of how the Birch Society circulated false and inflammatory information can be found in an article appearing in the May 1967 JBS magazine, *American Opinion*, by Gary Allen. The article was entitled "***The Plan To Burn Los Angeles***". A reprint of this article was often sold on literature tables at JBS-sponsored events such as JBS speakers appearing under the auspices of the JBS-front group, Truth About Civil Turmoil.



Gary Allen claimed in his article that a group of “40-50 Negroes sent by the Communists into the Los Angeles area from all over the United States” was known to the Los Angeles Police Department as “*The Organization*”. According to Allen, this group was “a board of revolutionary strategy” which “planned, engineered, and instigated the Watts rebellion...” in August 1965. Allen further stated that, “It was this team of highly trained Communists – The Organization – which planned and directed what happened in Watts.”

By contrast, investigative reporters for the *Los Angeles Times* contacted the Los Angeles Police Department Intelligence Division for comment. Its senior officer, Harold E. Yarnell Jr. stated that the Allen report was false. [See *Los Angeles Times*, 4/28/67, part II, pA6, “*Watts Riot As Rehearsal For Red Coup Discounted*”.]

The following excerpt from the *L.A. Times* article pertains to comments made by Gary Allen:

“Police Chief Tom Reddin has disputed a John Birch Society magazine article citing unnamed police as authority that the 1965 Watts riot was a rehearsal for a nationwide Communist revolution to be touched off by total burning of Los Angeles. ‘*The facts as stated in the article are not based on information in our files*’ Reddin said. ‘*We do not reach the same conclusions the writer does. We do not make the same reading*’...Allen writes that his information came from Los Angeles police officers, and particularly the intelligence division of the Police Department.

‘*We have investigated to determine whom he may have talked to*’ Reddin said. ‘*It was nobody in a position of authority---not I, the intelligence captain nor the former police chief (the late William H. Parker).*’

Reddin conceded the writer may have talked to ‘*someone at the working level*’. But Captain Harold E. Yarnell, Jr., head of the intelligence division, said an investigation failed to turn up any officer to whom the writer had talked. ‘*If we had such information, we wouldn’t talk to a writer*’ Yarnell pointed out. Yarnell said the article ‘*attempts to recite some history we believe is not based on fact*’, and then attempts to recite a major plot in the making. ‘*It is not our position that the August 1965 riot was Communist-inspired*’ he said. ‘*We have never been able to isolate any group as being the motivating forces or manipulators*’. ...

Said Yarnell: ‘*We haven’t been able to establish that any organization had anything to do with it. Three or four groups wanted to take credit. But when someone seriously became interested in talking to them about it, they*

*backed down. I'm sure the Communist Party is gleefully watching every bit of dissension. But they haven't gone out in front'.*

The article specifically mentions reports that during the rioting, men wearing red armbands and speaking through bullhorns gave directions to the mobs. Yarnell said thorough investigation has failed to substantiate such reports.

The article also claims the rioters used stolen loot to build up an arsenal of weapons to be employed in the forthcoming major Communist revolution. *'The only arsenals we've found have been those of paramilitary right-wing groups'* Yarnell said.

## (2) ERIC DUDLEY BUTLER



Eric Butler was the Far East Correspondent for JBS magazine, *American Opinion*. He also wrote articles for Ron Gostick's *Canadian Intelligence Service* newsletter. According to Butler, Jews were behind everything from the Spanish Inquisition to Nazism. Hitler, Butler declared, was of Jewish descent. The Fuhrer was "*a man who helped advance Jewish aims*". Nazi policies were financed by Jews - with the intention of having Jews arrive as refugees all over the world to spread their anti-Christian evil and political subversion.

In the early years of World War II, Butler produced two pamphlets, *"The War Behind the War"* and *"The Enemy Within"*, which warned of the "*demonic powers*" of the Jew.

Butler first came to the attention of the Australian federal government in 1945 after he served as an instructor of officers in the army. It was later revealed that he had been consorting with the enemy via the Japanese

Chamber of Commerce.

In 1946, he published his "seminal" work, *The International Jew: The Truth About the Protocols of Zion*. [Its original title was "**Hitler's Policy Was a Jewish Policy**" ]

Butler also stated that the holocaust was a hoax, and six million dead Jews was a joke. During World War II, Butler described our war-time ally Russia as "*a Jewish slave state . . . controlled by international Jewish financiers in New York*". Butler described the United Nations as "*merely a cloak for Jewish policies*", and aside from his association with the John Birch Society, he also worked with anti-Semites such as British Nazi Arnold Leese.

In the 1950s Butler denounced the vaccine against polio as a Jewish ruse to kill children. In his second book he stated: "***Violence to the negro is but a pleasurable excitement. Blood rites move him to ecstasy.***"

Mark Aarons, an expert on Nazis in Australia, said Butler was a "*leading fascist, a racist of the highest order, most especially he was an antisemite.*"

### **(3) ALBERT F. CANWELL**

This example illustrates why you cannot rely upon the JBS for accurate evaluations of people or events or history.

Albert F. Canwell was the first Chairman of the Washington State Un-American Activities Committee. He was an ardent supporter of Senator Joe McCarthy. In later years, the editor of the JBS magazine, *American Opinion*, asked Canwell to write several articles for *American Opinion*---which Canwell did.

Canwell was also a paid speaker under the auspices of the JBS Speakers Bureau and he made speeches around the country for them.

The JBS publicity release on Canwell described him as follows:

"Mr. Canwell is one of America's principal authorities on the internal threat from Communism. During his tenure as Chairman of the Washington State Committee on Un-American Activities, he was the first person to expose the machinations of Alger Hiss. An author, Mr. Canwell has published articles in American Opinion magazine...He has also served as Chief of the Identification Branch in the Spokane Sheriff's Department, worked on foreign investigations for the late Scott McLeod of the Department of State, and helped the FBI uncover Soviet espionage operations during the 1940's.

A keen researcher, crack investigator, and excellent speaker, Mr. Canwell is now Director of the American Intelligence Service and Freedom Library, Inc. of Washington."



In 1963, Canwell was one of several defendants in a libel lawsuit initiated by a Washington State legislator.

Several JBS members and supporters were co-defendants with Canwell because they had published material claiming that the state legislator and his wife were Communist or *"under Communist discipline"*.

A JBS chapter leader in Bellingham WA (Lee Adamson) formed a Citizens Defense Fund to assist all of the defendants in that lawsuit--including Canwell.

The judge in the case ruled that Canwell should be considered an *"expert witness"* about communist matters.

Here, then, is an excerpt from Canwell's lengthy 1997 Oral History interview about his long anti-Communist career. Timothy Frederick was the interviewer.

Canwell's comments about Robert Welch may be found starting on page 283 of the transcript:

**Albert F. Canwell: An Oral History**, Washington State Oral History Program, Office of the Secretary of State, 1997

<http://www.sos.wa.gov/legacyproject/collection/pdf/canwell.pdf>

**Mr. Canwell:**

"The issues were that Robert Welch was not an anti-Communist. He was an opportunist, a world socialist actually, and he was doing a very dishonest job. He would gather some very fine people about him. He was a member of the National Manufacturers Association. So he sold them the

idea that he was anti-Communist and that he had this program going and then he got quite a number of them to join his group. But what he was actually doing was getting people who were well identified as anti-Communist and able Americans, he'd get them to go along in his society and then he would smear them, destroy them. And that was what his object was."

**Mr. Frederick:**

Why was he doing that?

**Mr. Canwell:**

"Because he was an international socialist. I went to work in looking into his background when I began to have trouble with him. And I found that he had attended the London School of Economics, the top socialist school in the world. It became very obvious to me that he was able to acquire this leadership position by moving into the anti-Communist movement and pretending to be something that he was not. And then some of his own kind of people helped him do that: Drew Pearson, and others, who all of a sudden were attacking Robert Welch and giving him reams of free publicity. And the so-called Americans or anti-Communists thought, 'Well, if Drew Pearson is against him, he must be all right.' Actually Pearson and Welch were hand-in-glove."

"Another phase of this that I turned up was that Robert Welch was a long-time member of the American Civil Liberties Union, which would and did surprise a lot of people when I released that information. They denied it and he eventually made the statement that he belonged merely to get their publications, but that wasn't the case. There was friction on that level." ....

"Then they also put great effort into getting me to join their National Speakers Bureau. Again it became obvious to me what they wanted. They wanted my reputation plus they could put my picture in their brochure or their catalogue that they put out. But they would never find any worthwhile speaking engagements for me. I knew how that worked. They got Westbrook Pegler to write for them for awhile and then they started the damndest smear on him that you could imagine. I could see the pattern and I became acquainted with some of the national members of his board, Dan Draskovich and others, and Welch did the same thing to all of them. He'd get them to identify with the Birch Society either on the speakers bureau or on their board or on the writing level and then he'd circulate information about them, derogatory information that was damaging to them. You talk about a sophisticated espionage operation, that was it. I would say that ninety percent, ninety-five percent of the Birch Society members were

just downright good Americans, nothing wrong with them at all."

**Mr. Frederick:** Was he a head case?

**Mr. Canwell:**

"A head case? I don't know. I suspected that he was on drugs, and I say that from having observed him in two or three meetings where he was talking and he'd leave the meeting and take some pills. I don't know what kind or what for but I suspected that might be the case. Are these international socialists psychopathic or what? You know they just aren't pro-Americans. They aren't supportive of our system. This is all news to you, I imagine. You may think I'm psychotic, but on this I'm not. I have correspondence. I told him that because of his activity he couldn't get his name in the paper any more and that I was going to put him back on the front page. But I just didn't have time to work on him properly."

**(4) SELMA ALABAMA SHERIFF JAMES G. CLARK JR.**



Sheriff Clark was another one of those unsavory characters who always seem to attach themselves to the Birch Society. Clark was notorious for his use of violent tactics and intimidation of African Americans. He started a fight with Annie Lee Cooper, a 54-year-old black woman standing in line to register to vote, that ended with Clark's deputies holding her down while he beat her with a billy club. Clark and his deputies used cattle prods on black youths at a civil rights demonstration to force them to march until some collapsed or vomited from exhaustion. Claiming that any attempt to gain voting rights by African Americans was part of a plan for "*black supremacy*," Clark wore a small button reading "*Never*" as a symbol of his opposition to black civil rights.

During World War II, Clark was an engineer and gunner with the Army Air



Force in the Aleutian Islands. Afterwards he settled in Dallas County (AL) and raised cattle.

In 1955, Clark was appointed Sheriff of Dallas County (AL) by Gov. Jim Folsom Sr. He served as Sheriff from 1955-1966

In 1963 the civil rights group, SNCC, organized a "*Freedom Day*" in Selma to register black voters. Clark dispatched a photographer to take pictures and he threatened to send the photos to their employers. (At the time only 1% of eligible blacks in Selma were registered to vote.)

In March of 1965, Clark joined Alabama State Troopers in attacking marchers with clubs and tear gas on the Edmund Pettus Bridge – injuring 84 marchers. After subsequent demonstrations, Congress passed the Voting Rights Act. In 1966 Clark ran for re-election but he was defeated in the Democratic primary.

Details re: ***United States vs James G. Clark Jr.*** here:

[https://scholar.google.com/scholar\\_case?case=11553052823114006819&q=James+G.+Clark+Jr.&hl=en&as\\_sdt=2006](https://scholar.google.com/scholar_case?case=11553052823114006819&q=James+G.+Clark+Jr.&hl=en&as_sdt=2006)

On May 9, 1967 Clark was the main speaker before the segregationist Greater Los Angeles Citizens Council.

On October 27 1978, Clark was indicted when the "*Federal Grand Jury, Southern District of New York, returned a 49 count of 17 subjects*" in connection with scheme to defraud investors throughout the United States via Trident Consortium (RICO and Fraud by Wire; Title 18, USC, Sections 1343 and 1962(C).

"Investigation of Trident Consortium revealed a network of international conmen, thieves and organized crime which conducted an advance fee operations for the period 1/77 through 12/77, by the use of organized brokers located throughout the U.S. Approximately 50 customers lost a total of \$2 million in advance fees to Trident Consortium." [FBI HQ file 87-144870, #87x1; 1/18/79]

On December 1, 1978, Clark was sentenced to two years in Federal prison for his conviction in Montgomery AL of conspiracy to smuggle marijuana. Clark spent 9 months in prison. More details:

[http://www.nytimes.com/1978/12/02/archives/exsheriff-is-sentenced-to-2-years-new-york-case-described.html?\\_r=0](http://www.nytimes.com/1978/12/02/archives/exsheriff-is-sentenced-to-2-years-new-york-case-described.html?_r=0)

(5) REV. FERRELL GRISWOLD



From 1963-1965, Griswold served on the staff of Alabama Governor George C. Wallace. Griswold was interviewed by FBI Agents of the Birmingham AL field office after he sent the FBI a letter requesting 500 copies of an FBI publication. A notation on the file copy of the Bureau reply states that “Griswold was interviewed by Agents of the Birmingham office on 09-26-63. During that interview he advised he was a member of the local JBS and attends meetings of that group regularly. He denied membership in the National States Rights Party...Rev. Griswold stated he is a segregationist and is frequently invited to speak on the subject of constitutional rights and communism at local meetings of the Klan and other conservative organizations.”

Among the times when Griswold was a speaker at Klan or other white supremacist events were the following. Note: The Ku Klux Klan (described by Griswold as a "conservative" organization, was on the U.S. Attorney General's List of Subversive Organizations.

- 06/07/73 = Rally of United Americans For Conservative Government at North Birmingham Masonic Lodge.
- 09/02/63 = United Klans of America (UKA) rally at National Guard armory in Birmingham. Featured speaker was Imperial Wizard Robert Shelton. According to FBI informant reports, Griswold, Shelton, and third speaker (George Fisher) “alleged that the entire civil rights movement ...is Communist inspired (and) the leaders of the various Negro groups active in the integration movement are Communists.” [FBI HQ 157-370-4, #106; Birmingham report on United Klans of America, page 5.]

02/08/64 = UKA banquet at Dinkler-Tutwiler Hotel, Birmingham under name

[https://archive.org/details/foia\\_FBI\\_MONOGRAPH-National\\_States\\_Rights\\_Party\\_69p](https://archive.org/details/foia_FBI_MONOGRAPH-National_States_Rights_Party_69p)

04/29/64 = Conservative Tract League, Birmingham AL

(6) GORDON D. "JACK" MOHR



Jack Mohr was a virulent anti-semite and an adherent of Christian Identity theology. Some of his comments during his speeches appear below:

**"Any time a Christian gives aid to those who call their Savior '*the illegitimate bastard of a Jewish whore, conceived during menstruation*,' as the Jews state in their Talmud, they commit treason against their God, against His Son, Jesus the King, and against everything they claim to hold dear and sacred!"**

**"One of the most dangerous of all Jewish organizations is the Anti-Defamation League, of the Jewish Masonic B'nai B'rith. They are for all practical purposes, a powerful secret police organization operating illegally in the United States as an unregistered agent of the Israeli**

government."

"People cannot judge wisely unless they are informed, and the controlled media of America for at least the last seventy years, has done a masterful job of 'mis-information' to the public. A mis-informed, or un-informed public becomes a real danger to our freedom, but is so much easier for the 'masters' to control." "

"The intellectual stupidity of white Christian Americans has played into the hands of our enemies, until today we stand on the edge of slavery and annihilation as a race."

"The purpose of the ADL is to fill Federal data banks with information on all persons and organizations who are '*prejudiced*' against their drive for control, thus alerting law enforcement agencies nationwide on any of these activities. If the ADL had its way, anyone they accuse of '*prejudice*' would be accused, tried, convicted and imprisoned."

<https://web.archive.org/web/20161117102601/http://israelect.com:80/reference/>

"The power of the world Jewry has grown to the place where most pastors are afraid to buck it, even though they know the Jews are the enemies of Jesus Christ, and thusly of God Himself."

"There is no sphere of human activity where these anti-Christ's have not done Satan's propaganda work. They clamor for '*freedom in a democracy*' so they can tear down the Republic. They desire freedom only for themselves so they can destroy every vestige of our White Christian Civilization."

<https://web.archive.org/web/20170224103525/http://israelect.com/reference/>

"While Christians have been willing to open our doors and share America with the Jews; they in turn do not want to share America with the Christians. They want it all! Whenever they are accused, whenever their plot is exposed, they raise the plaintive cry of '*anti-Semitism*'. This needs to be corrected in Christian minds, to read, '*Becoming Jew conscious!*' "

"You may say, as others have: '*But why condemn all Jews?*' It is

because the Jewish Communities cooperate with the Zionist venture. Even though some of their leaders take a stand against Zionism, very few Jewish voices are raised in opposition to International Jewish crimes. They have developed an arrogance which they believe places them above the law of any land."

<https://web.archive.org/web/20120916034539/http://www.israelect.com:80/ref>

## (7) JOHN HERBERT REES



Circa 1967, Rees became the Washington Bureau Chief of the JBS weekly news magazine, *The Review of the News*. In the 1970's he also self-published a newsletter, "*Information Digest*" as a product of his organization, National Goals, Inc.

The following data comes from a 3-page FBI memo dated September 27, 1968 from Alex Rosen (Assistant Director, General Investigative Division) to Assistant Director Cartha DeLoach (HQ file 176-1410-78, #334). The first page of the memo is a "synopsis" of the details presented on pages 2 and 3. What follows below is the entire text of the synopsis:

**"An investigator for the House Committee on Un-American Activities (HCUA) informed our Chicago office that John Herbert Rees will testify before this committee as a friendly witness about information he has concerning the disturbances at the Democratic National Convention. Rees was in Chicago in an undercover capacity. In addition, the following hostile witnesses have been subpoenaed, all of which we have under intensive investigation as principal subjects in the disturbances: Abbott Hoffman, Thomas Hayden, Rennard Davis, David Dellinger, and Jerry Rubin.**

**Rees, a 44-year old white male and British national is an official of**

National Goals, Inc., a non-profit counseling firm to police and other Government agencies in management and training. Last April he contacted our Newark office with an investigator from HCUA stating he had information of a racial and criminal nature. He spoke in generalities and furnished no information of value. Interviewing Agents were of the opinion his interests in contacting the FBI were self-serving. Rees was forced to resign his full-time position with a Federally funded local organization in Newark on 3/8/68 when it determined he had another full time job. U.S. Dept. of Labor is attempting to recover \$7,597 paid to Rees in salary. Rees was fired from his job as a reporter with the *London Daily Mirror* when he used the paper to enhance his own personal standing. He kept company with a former secretary of our Legat in London in 1962 who planned to marry Rees before she discovered he was married and had five children. Rees presently married to a Negro. In 1964 he received nation-wide publicity when Grace Metalious, author of the novel '*Peyton Place*' died and left her quarter million dollar estate to him based on a death-bed will leaving nothing to her estranged husband and three children. She had known him for only a few months. Rees subsequently renounced all claim to the estate when it was determined the liabilities exceeded the assets.

**ACTION:** Rees is an unscrupulous unethical individual and an opportunist who operates with a self-serving interest. Information he has provided has been exaggerated and in generalities. Information from him cannot be considered reliable. We should not initiate any interview with this unscrupulous unethical individual concerning his knowledge of the disturbance in Chicago as to do so would be a waste of time."

J. Edgar Hoover initialed the memo and wrote "OK" on its "action" recommendation.

**Pg 2 of the memo amplifies the FBI's concerns about Rees:**

"He attempted to sell himself and his services to the FBI. The interviewing Agents believed his interests were self-serving and that he came to the FBI thinking this would enhance his credentials in contacting other potential clients."

Same data also contained in Newark 157-2535, serial#4 (4/17/68 LHM regarding Rees and National Goals, Inc.) and serial #5 (SAC Newark memo to JEH 4/17/68 on Rees visit to Newark office).



Newark 157-2535, #5, page 4 of the memo contains the following observations:

“In all, it was the opinion of the interviewing agents that Rees coming to the Newark office was in some way attempting to enhance his credentials in contacting other potential clients. No encouragement was given him since it was felt that he is a ‘*name dropper*’ and it is not too unlikely that he will advise others that he has been in contact with the FBI, if he feels such a statement will be beneficial to him...In any contact with him, it will be at ‘*arm’s length*’ since it is believed he does exaggerate and will enlarge upon the truth to make a point. Further, Rees’ background indicates he is an opportunist without scruples; and while he jokingly referred to himself as a con man at one point during the interview, it is felt there is more truth than jest in his remark.” Page 2 of the memo mentions that “Rees spoke in generalities regarding the racial situation and furnished no information of value.”

John Rees is another former Bircher who had a serious falling out with the new leadership of the JBS after the death of Robert Welch.

## (8) ALAN STANG



Control and domination of the civil rights movement by subversive elements is a constant theme in JBS literature during the 1960's.

According to Robert Welch in “*The Time Has Come*”, a 1964 JBS pamphlet, the Communist civil rights strategy since 1928 was to stir up racial bitterness and rioting while promising “*to convert the Dixie states into a Negro Soviet Republic...*” This theme was echoed in a Birch Society national newspaper ad from August 1965 captioned “What’s Wrong With Civil Rights?” and it also was repeated by other JBS-recommended sources such as Dan Smoot and **Alan Stang**.

Alan Stang devoted chapter 3 of his 1965 JBS-published book, *It's Very Simple: The True Story of Civil Rights*, to discussion of this "strategy". [See "*The Communist Position on the Negro Question*", pages 28-37]

By contrast, J. Edgar Hoover pointed out in his January 1960 testimony before the Senate Internal Security Subcommittee that the 17th National Convention of the Communist Party USA held in New York City on December 10, 1959 had discarded that position:

"The Negro resolution adopted by the convention discarded the party's historic position advocating 'self-determination' meaning that Negroes should be given the right to form a separate nation in the Southern States...The 1959 convention resolution hence represents a party admission that its position concerning Negroes is bankrupt. Time itself has shown that the party is not interested in the welfare of the Negro, but only in using him as a tool to advance party interests." [J. Edgar Hoover: *An Analysis of the 17th National Convention of the Communist Party USA*; Statement made to Senate Internal Security Subcommittee, 1/17/60, page 7; Also see: *FBI Law Enforcement Bulletin*, March 1960 – for same comment.]

In the November 1965 JBS Bulletin, Mr. Welch strongly recommended Alan Stang's book entitled *It's Very Simple: The True Story of Civil Rights* because, in Welch's words, **"It gives the whole picture of the 'civil rights' development, as a part of Communist strategy, more completely and convincingly than anything else available."**

Again, in May 1966, Mr. Welch used the JBS Bulletin to heap praise upon Stang's book:

**"This book, because of its thoroughness, its comprehensive coverage of the whole 'civil rights' story, and its meticulous documentation, is the best single searchlight we have for exposing the 'civil rights' fraud."**

According to Alan Stang, the **"civil rights movement was not only planned by the Communists, but was begun, is staffed, and is conducted by the Communists—and has only one real purpose: the destruction and communization of America."**

In May 1965, the Special Agent in Charge of the Boston FBI Field Office forwarded proof sheets of the Stang book to FBI Headquarters, two months before its scheduled publication. An evaluation of the book was prepared

for Assistant Director W.C. Sullivan by F.J. Baumgardner:

**"It's Very Simple is an attempt to rationalize today's civil rights movement in this country as primarily a communist operation...Practically all his documentation is to public source material and there is no significant information in the book which appears to be new and previously unknown to the Bureau. Stang makes frequent use of literary license and importantly fails to include documentation for key passages (examples appear on pages 101 and 185). An entire chapter (14) is devoted to an attack on civil rights legislation and the book, in general, is critical of all Administration and other efforts aimed at improving the lot of the Negro."** [HQ 100-106670-1412, May 28, 1965, and 100-106670-1525, June 24, 1965, both F.J. Baumgardner to W.C. Sullivan].

The concluding "Observations" paragraph states:

**"The details of the book do not support the strong conclusions reached by the author. We have had available to us all the material which Stang has plus considerable additional data from our investigations and we could not arrive at such conclusions. The impression is received that Stang may have well started with his conclusions and then developed the information and manner of presentation which he hoped would prove his point. This work must be viewed in the light of the author's apparent close connections with Robert Welch and the John Birch Society."** [Ibid]

### **ALAN STANG RESEARCH HABITS**

Some context about Alan Stang's research habits might be appropriate to supplement the FBI's evaluation.

Alan Stang authored the *American Opinion* magazine article that resulted in an historic precedent-setting libel lawsuit by Chicago lawyer Elmer Gertz against Robert Welch, Inc. [The article by Stang was entitled, "*Frame-Up-Richard Nuccio and the War on Police*" which was published in the April 1969 issue of the Birch Society monthly magazine, *American Opinion*.

Richard Nuccio was a Birch Society member and section leader. His family later harshly criticized the JBS for what they claimed was its lack of proper support.]

Two juries on two separate occasions found the Alan Stang article to be libelous and the second jury awarded Gertz \$300,000 in punitive damages in addition to \$100,000 compensatory damages. Ultimately, the Gertz

matter wound up being heard before the U.S. Supreme Court.

During the Oral Arguments before the U.S. Supreme Court on 11/14/73, the Birch Society was represented by Clyde J. Watts (a JBS National Council member).

[http://www.oyez.org/sites/default/files/audio/cases/1973/72-617\\_19731114-lq-argument.mp3](http://www.oyez.org/sites/default/files/audio/cases/1973/72-617_19731114-lq-argument.mp3)

During the oral arguments, Clyde Watts was asked by a Justice:

**"I understand Counsel brought a petition to say that it had been conceded at the trial that the article was libelous - do you deny that?"**

Watts observed that he did not think the article was libelous but he acknowledged that during the original trial

At 35:04 = ***"It was conceded that some of the remarks in the article were false."***

At 36:01 = Watts admits that:

***"Under Illinois law, the inference and impact of the article, absent the New York Times concept, would be libelous in Illinois. I think the Court is accurate in that observation."***

The 1982 Appeals Court decision made the following comments about Scott Stanley Jr. (editor of *American Opinion*) and Alan Stang (the author of the defamatory article about Gertz).

***"In summary, Stanley conceived of a story line; solicited Stang, a writer with a known and unreasonable propensity to label persons or organizations as Communist, to write the article; and after the article was submitted, made virtually no effort to check the validity of statements that were defamatory per se of Gertz, and in fact added further defamatory material based on Stang's 'facts'. There was more than enough evidence for the jury to conclude that this article was published with utter disregard for the truth or falsity of the statements contained in the article about Gertz."*** [U.S. Court of Appeals for the Seventh Circuit, No. 81-2483, *Elmer Gertz v. Robert Welch, Inc.*, 6/16/82, page 20].

There is also a footnote appended to this paragraph in which the Appeals Court observed that:

***"Furthermore, Stang's conduct in investigating and researching the article also is evidence of actual malice."...***

Eventually, Stang became disgusted with the new leadership of the Birch Society after the death of Robert Welch. Stang then created a website entitled *"As I See It: A Brief Memoir"* as a vehicle for disaffected Birchers to share their personal horror stories about what they claimed was dishonesty, corruption, and immorality within the Birch Society.

Stang's *Memoir* website is now defunct but the 2002 version is here:

<https://web.archive.org/web/20030211031249/http://www.alanstang.com:80/>

## (9) HAROLD LORD VARNEY



When Varney was 18 years old, he published *Socialist Tribune*. He later became a national leader and lecturer for the IWW (Industrial Workers of the World).

By 1920, Varney became a publicity writer for the Republican National Committee. From 1927-1933 he was Managing Director of the Italian Historical Society, during which time it published 15 pro-Mussolini books.

From 1933 to 1936, Varney was co-owner and Editor of *The Awakener* magazine a pro-fascist periodical which was repeatedly applauded by the Nazi propaganda organ *World Service*. *The Awakener* was set up as a partnership between Varney and Joseph Peter Kamp. It was published twice a month. Associate Editors included Lawrence Dennis, Col. Eugene Sanctuary, and Demarest Lloyd and one major contributor was John Eoghan Kelly (of Christian Front).

From 1930-1935, Varney had a room in Kamp's apartment. NOTE: When Spruille Braden was interviewed by the FBI on March 15, 1961 about Varney, Braden described Varney as **"definitely not a Communist, but he approached being a Fascist."** (NYC 97-1889, #18; 3/31/61, page 6)

In September 1953, Varney wrote *"The Truth About Joe McCarthy"* (link below) for *American Mercury* magazine -- which, at that time, was owned

and published by J. Russell Maguire. Varney became the Political Editor for the *Mercury*: <http://www.unz.org/Pub/AmMercury-1953sep-00003>

Maguire (aka John Russell Maguire or Russell Maguire) was born in 1897. He attended Massachusetts Institute of Technology and New York University. He began his business career as an order clerk. He served in the Navy during World War I. After the war, he worked for Aetna Casualty and Surety Company but he left them in 1935 to form the Russell Maguire Company, an investment firm. This firm was dissolved in 1941 after an investigation by the Securities and Exchange Commission found that two companies under his control were guilty of illegal manipulation of stocks.

Subsequently, in 1945, the SEC denied his application to register as head of a brokerage company because of the 1941 incident.

Maguire was President and Chairman of Maguire Industries, Inc. The company originated in 1916 as Auto Ordinance Corporation but in 1939 it was sold to Thompson Automatic Arms Corp. Maguire acquired this corporation in 1944 and it became part of Maguire Industries, Inc. During World War II, Maguire's corporation produced the bulk of Thompson submachine guns. Large government contracts made Maguire a multi-millionaire. His personal fortune was estimated at about \$100 million.

Maguire's political views were not well known prior to 1952. He financially supported the distribution of John O. Beaty's 1951 book, *Iron Curtain Over America*. The oldest Methodist Church periodical in North America (*Zion's Herald*) described Beaty's book as ***"the most extensive piece of racist propaganda in the history of the anti-semitic movement in America."***

Maguire was also a financial supporter of Merwin K. Hart's organization, the National Economic Council. [Hart later founded and headed the first Birch Society chapter in New York City.]

In 1952 Maguire purchased *American Mercury* magazine (hereinafter AM) which was founded in 1924 by Alfred A. Knopf and edited by H.L. Mencken. Maguire published AM until 1961 when he sold it. A few months after he acquired AM, his top editors resigned. In a joint statement they observed:

***"It has been our understanding that the magazine would strive to represent dynamic and sophisticated conservatism...and that was the direction in which we sought to guide it. But in view of {Maguire's} lack of sympathy, we feel it impossible to continue."***

[*Time magazine*, 12-8-52, "Trouble For The Mercury"]



During this period, Maguire hired Allen A. Zoll. Zoll became an account executive for AM advertising, and he solicited subscriptions. Zoll's previous claim to fame was his formation of American Patriots, Inc. – an organization that was listed on the U.S. Attorney General's list of subversive (fascist) organizations.

Maguire made some dramatic staff changes for AM and he hired some well known New York conservative anti-communists. John A. Clements became editor. Columnists and regular contributors included: J.B. Matthews (formerly with the Dies Committee and Sen. Joe McCarthy and later a close friend and confidant of Birch Society founder Robert Welch), Ralph deToledano (author of "*Seeds of Treason*") George Fielding Eliot (who was military editor) and columnists Howard Rushmore and Eugene Lyons.

In September 1955, the entire top staff of the Mercury (listed above) resigned en masse. Frederick Woltman, the investigative reporter who was awarded the 1946 Pulitzer prize for his articles in the *New York World Telegram and Sun* on Communist infiltration of labor unions, was personally acquainted with the entire AM staff. He wrote: **"The editors resigned feeling that attempts were being made to introduce anti-Semitic material into the Mercury."** [*Time*, 10/3/55, "*Blowup At The Mercury*."]

Maguire's step-daughter became Managing Editor in December 1955.

In December 1955, AM re-activated a 1953 column that was discontinued in 1954 captioned "*Do You Know?*" which consisted of short statements of alleged "facts".

AM frequently cited as reliable sources such prominent anti-semites as Father Charles Coughlin and Henry Ford Sr. – in particular, the series of articles published as "*The International Jew*" in Ford's Dearborn, Michigan newspaper.

On April 18, 1957 Maguire was named as head of the Constitution Party.

Maguire was the keynote speaker at the Party's 1957 convention in San Francisco. He discussed the evils of Jewish "*international bankers*" and their efforts to subvert America.

In October 1957, Maguire personally contacted the then-Secretary of Defense, Neil McElroy to report what he considered "*subversion*" within our

CIA and other agencies. The Defense Department referred the matter to the FBI and the Bureau instructed its New York City office to interview Maguire.

Here is the summary which the Special Agent in Charge of the FBI's New York City office sent to J. Edgar Hoover:

**“He said that the powerful subversive organization that has the U.S. Government under its influence is made up of Zionists. He said it's the aim of the Zionists to take over the entire world, and their influence reaches into the higher echelons in the U.S. Government.**

**According to Maguire, Zionists started World War I in order to set up the Communist Government of Russia. He added that Communism is just an offshoot of Zionism. He said that the Zionists planned and initiated World War II in order to set up the country of Israel and they are planning World War III in order to take over the entire world.**

**Maguire stated that the headquarters of the Zionist movement is not in Russia nor in Israel but is located in New York City.”** [FBI HQ file 62-105023, #883, 11/2/58, SAC NYC to J. Edgar Hoover, page 3]

In January 1961, Russell Maguire announced the sale of AM:

***“We are happy to tell you that the Defenders of the Christian Faith, Inc., Wichita Kansas, now owns the American Mercury magazine...”***

The Defenders was organized in 1925 by the Rev. Gerald B. Winrod. In a January 23, 1961 letter to Tom Anderson, Robert Welch commented:

**“The people to whom Maguire sold the *Mercury* are, according to reports I have received which seem reliable, one of the worst racist and hate groups in the United States. I am told that they are even more viciously anti-Catholic than they are anti-Jewish.”**

In 1963 AM was again sold to a group that included JBS member Gen. Edwin A. Walker and in 1966, Willis Carto's Noontide Press acquired AM and he merged it with *Western Destiny* magazine, to become a quarterly journal devoting itself to circulating racist and neo-nazi propaganda.

Comments